PREFACE

The present Handbook of the East Turki Language attempts to fill a need felt among English speakers for a basic grammar of the present-day East Turki language (also called modern Uigur) as it is written in Sinkiang province in western China (Chinese Turkestan). The compiler aims at presenting the grammar with the completeness necessary for reading the journalistic type of language.

The only other complete grammar of East Turki in English is the 1912 work of G. Raquette, which at present is not available to the American student. Shaw's and Vambery's sketches of the grammar are inadequate and hopelessly out of date.

For readers of Russian, two highly useful grammars are in print—those of Nasilov and Borovkov (see bibliography)—which the compiler of the present Handbook found most valuable as sources of material. The student will find Jarring's romanized texts with English translation in Materials to the Knowledge of Eastern Turki extremely useful in deepening his knowledge of the language.

Unfortunately, the lack of adequate dictionaries is a serious handicap to the student. Raquette's English-Turki Dictionary is limited in its scope. Shähidi's Uigur-Chinese-Russian Dictionary is up-to-date and very useful but limited of course to students knowing Chinese or Russian. The English-speaking student, therefore, must resort to a standard (Osmanlı)
Turkish dictionary, such as that of A.V. Moran, which he can readily learn to apply to East Turki.

The preferred approach to East Turki is via Turkish, for the study of which materials are plentiful. However, the present *Handbook* is designed to provide complete materials without reference to allied languages. All the essential elements of the grammar are explained and illustrated by many examples of their use. As East Turki employs the Arabic alphabet, its use is described and all sample sentences and words are given in Arabic script, transliterated, and translated.

The *Handbook* is designed for easy reference and is divided into thirteen Parts. Part I explains the use of the Arabic alphabet; Part II, phonology; Parts III-IX, morphology; Parts X-XII, syntax. Part XIII gives forty complicated sentences analyzed and annotated and serves as a transition to an East Turki reader which will be published at a later date. The table of contents gives the subject of each section; and a table of the most useful verbal forms and an alphabetical listing of grammatical affixes are provided as appendixes.

To aid him in learning the actual sounds of the East Turki language, tape-recordings of three native speakers are available to the student. These include *Selected East Turki Texts* (see bibliography), which is tape-recorded in two versions, (one speaker being a native of Kashgar and the other a native of Urumchi); and a tape comprising all the word lists and sample sentences given in the present *Handbook*. Furthermore, other tape-recordings, including one giving common conversational expressions, will be subsequently prepared.
As Turkic languages are similar to one another, a mastery of East Turki will open the door to the relatively easy understanding of other eastern Turkic languages, such as Kirghiz, Kazakh and Uzbek. Likewise, much of this knowledge can be applied to the study of Osmanli Turkish.

The compiler acknowledges valuable assistance received from Mr. David Osman Rashid, native speaker of East Turki, who reviewed, and made tape-recordings of, the East Turki words and sentences contained in the Handbook.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PART I: EAST TURKI WRITTEN LANGUAGE AND THE ARABIC-PERSIAN ALPHABET</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-2. The alphabet</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Writing the alphabet</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Special combinations of letters</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Other signs used with the alphabet</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Writing the consonants</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Writing the vowels</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Use of alif</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. The letter ha</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Spelling</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. Sample of text</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. Other alphabets used in writing East Turki</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PART II: SOUNDS OF THE EAST TURKI LANGUAGE AND PHONETIC VARIATIONS</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. Vowel sounds</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. Phonetic variation of vowels</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. Vowel harmony</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16. Front and back vowels</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. Front and back consonants</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18. Examples of paired grammatical affixes</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19. I-umlaut</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20. Unrounding of vowels</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21. Labial attraction</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22. Position of accent and vowel reduction</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Section</td>
<td>Title</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23.</td>
<td>Inorganic vowels, Other vowel alternation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24.</td>
<td>Diphthongs, Phonetic variation of consonants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25.</td>
<td>Assimilation of consonants of affixes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26.</td>
<td>Treatment of final consonants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27.</td>
<td>Treatment of medial consonants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28.</td>
<td>Treatment of r and l</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29.</td>
<td>Alternation of consonants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.</td>
<td>Palatalization</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31.</td>
<td>Use of Turkish dictionaries for East Turki</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PART III: INTRODUCTORY: SIMPLE SENTENCE, VERB "TO BE"**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>34.</td>
<td>Word order; subject and predicate</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35.</td>
<td>Word order; subject, predicate and complements</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36.</td>
<td>Interrogative sentence</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37.</td>
<td>The verb &quot;to be&quot;</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38.</td>
<td>Personal pronouns</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39.</td>
<td>Examples of pronoun conjugation</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.</td>
<td>Use of auxiliaries dur and ekän</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41.</td>
<td>Past tense of &quot;to be&quot;:  edü-</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42.</td>
<td>Negative of &quot;to be&quot;:  emäňa</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43.</td>
<td>Impersonal existence: &quot;there is&quot;</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PART IV: NOUNS**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>44.</td>
<td>Absence of grammatical gender</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45.</td>
<td>Articles</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46.</td>
<td>Plural sign</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47.</td>
<td>Possessive suffixes</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48.</td>
<td>Use of bar and yoq to express possession</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49.</td>
<td>Use of bar and yoq as relative modifiers</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.</td>
<td>Noun declension</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51.</td>
<td>Order of affixes</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52.</td>
<td>Functions of the cases</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53.</td>
<td>Nominative case</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part</td>
<td>Topic</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I.</td>
<td>Case</td>
<td>52.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>54.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>55.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>56.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>57.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>58.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>59.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>60.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>61.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II.</td>
<td>Pronouns</td>
<td>62.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>63.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>64.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>65.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>66.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>67.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>68.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>69.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>70.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>71.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III.</td>
<td>Adjectives</td>
<td>72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>73.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>74.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>75.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>76.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>77.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>78.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>79.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>80.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>83.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>84.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>85.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

vii
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PART VII:</th>
<th>NUMERALS</th>
<th>121</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>86.</td>
<td>Cardinal numbers</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>87.</td>
<td>Islamic numbers</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>88.</td>
<td>Use of numbers</td>
<td>124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>89.</td>
<td>Ordinal numbers</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90.</td>
<td>Fractions</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>91.</td>
<td>Distributive numerals</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>92.</td>
<td>Collective numerals</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>93.</td>
<td>Numeral adverbs</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94.</td>
<td>Weights and measures</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>95.</td>
<td>Monetary terms</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PART VIII:</th>
<th>ADVERBS, POST-POSITIONS, CONJUNCTIONS</th>
<th>131</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>96.</td>
<td>Adjectives used as adverbs</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>97.</td>
<td>Invariable adverbs</td>
<td>132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>98.</td>
<td>Derived adverbs</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99.</td>
<td>Adverbs with the suffix -&lt;sub&gt;9&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100.</td>
<td>Interrogative adverbs</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101.</td>
<td>Variable adverbs</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102.</td>
<td>Other adverbs</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103-5.</td>
<td>Post-positions</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>106.</td>
<td>Auxiliary words</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>107.</td>
<td>Conjunctions</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PART IX:</th>
<th>VERBS</th>
<th>147</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>108.</td>
<td>Verb stem</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>109.</td>
<td>Verb stems derived from nouns</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>110.</td>
<td>Compound verb with noun plus qilmaq</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111.</td>
<td>Secondary verb stem</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112.</td>
<td>Passive voice</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113.</td>
<td>Reciprocal verb</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114.</td>
<td>Causative verb</td>
<td>153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115.</td>
<td>Use of causative verb</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116.</td>
<td>Verb stem with multiple affixes</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117-18.</td>
<td>Imperative verb</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page</td>
<td>Section</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>155</td>
<td>Conjugated forms of the present participle</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>156</td>
<td>Present-immediate future (present inchoative)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>157</td>
<td>Other inchoative tenses</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>158</td>
<td>Necessitative verbs (present participle)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>159</td>
<td>Conjugated forms of verbal nouns</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>160</td>
<td>Tenses based on the infinitive in -maq.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>161</td>
<td>Progressive tenses</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>162</td>
<td>Verb of intention</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>163</td>
<td>Necessitative verbs (infinitive)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>164</td>
<td>Conjugated forms of the verbal noun in -ṣaṣ.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>165</td>
<td>Conjugated forms of the verbal noun in -ṣi.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>166</td>
<td>Forms expressing wish</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>167</td>
<td>Forms expressing necessity</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>168</td>
<td>Forms expressing probability</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>169</td>
<td>Other forms of the future tense</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>170</td>
<td>The infinitive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>171</td>
<td>Verbal noun in -ṣaṣ used as infinitive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>172</td>
<td>The infinitive in -maq</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>173</td>
<td>The non-temporal gerund in -ṣaṣ used as infinitive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>174</td>
<td>Other non-temporal gerunds</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>175</td>
<td>The non-temporal gerund in -ṣaṣ</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>176</td>
<td>The non-temporal gerund in -ṣunṣa</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>PART X:</strong>  GERUNDINAL CONSTRUCTION</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>177</td>
<td>Syntactic use of gerunds</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>178</td>
<td>Present gerund</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>179</td>
<td>Reduplicated present gerund</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>180</td>
<td>Present gerund in compound verbal expressions</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>181</td>
<td>Verb of possibility with almaq</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>182</td>
<td>Past gerund</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>183</td>
<td>Secondary predicate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>184</td>
<td>Negative forms of the secondary predicate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>185</td>
<td>Past gerund as adverb</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>186</td>
<td>Past gerund in the formation of complex verbs</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187</td>
<td>The invariable element of the complex verb</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>188</td>
<td>The variable element of the complex verb</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>189</td>
<td>Verbs of motion as auxiliary verbs</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART XI: PARTICIPIAL CONSTRUCTION

203. Syntactic use of participles
204. Distinction between present and past participles
205. Negative participle
206. The participle as a verbal adjective
207. Structure of the participial phrase
208. Expanded participial modifier
209. Expanded participial substantive
210. Nominative case: expanded subject
211. Genitive case: expanded genitive modifier
212. Accusative case: expanded direct object
213. Expanded direct object
214. Indirect discourse
215. Dative case: expanded adverbial complement
216. Locative case: expanded adverbial complement
217. Ablative case: expanded adverbial complement
218. Other types of expanded participial complements
219. Participles used with bilän
220. Participles used with üçün
221. Participles used with toğruda and hàqqida
222. Participles used with -dök
223. Participles used with -çäh
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PART XII:</th>
<th>COMPLEX SENTENCES</th>
<th>253</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>224.</td>
<td>Types of complex sentences</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>225.</td>
<td>Causal clause</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>226.</td>
<td>Substantive clause</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>227.</td>
<td>Direct discourse</td>
<td>256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>228.</td>
<td>Use of ḏep to express purpose</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>229.</td>
<td>Use of ḏep to express cause</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>230.</td>
<td>Use of ḏep with the imperative to express purpose</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>231.</td>
<td>Use of ḏep with the imperative to state a polite request</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>232.</td>
<td>Special use of ḏemāk with the imperative</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>233.</td>
<td>Complex sentences with conditional forms of the verb</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>234.</td>
<td>Subjunctive mood</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>235.</td>
<td>Present subjunctive</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>236.</td>
<td>Past subjunctive</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>237-39.</td>
<td>Present conditional</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239.</td>
<td>Past conditional</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241.</td>
<td>Use of conditional to express wish</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>242.</td>
<td>Use of the conditional to express polite request</td>
<td>267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243.</td>
<td>ḏemāk to express polite request</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>244.</td>
<td>Present conditional with particles qū or qū to express polite request</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>245.</td>
<td>Concessional clause</td>
<td>269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>246.</td>
<td>Other concessonal clauses with bolmaq</td>
<td>270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>247.</td>
<td>Absolute construction with bolsa</td>
<td>271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>248.</td>
<td>Absolute construction with isāq</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>249.</td>
<td>Absolute construction with ašaqla</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>250.</td>
<td>Use of bolmaq to express possibility</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>251.</td>
<td>Use of bolsa with kerāk to express necessity</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| PART XIII: | SAMPLE SENTENCES ANALYZED | 275 |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY | 315 |
| APPENDIX I: Verbal Forms | 321 |
| APPENDIX II: Index of grammatical affixes | 327 |

xii
INTRODUCTION

East Turki (or Uigur) is the chief language of Chinese Turkestan (Sinkiang province). The population of something over four million (estimated variously as high as eight million) is made up of some fourteen nationalities including speakers of various Turkic, Iranian, Mongolian and Chinese dialects.

The literary language goes back directly to classical Uigur (or old Turkish), which had its own alphabet and flourished between the 8th and 15th centuries. Beginning with the 15th century the literary language changed considerably as the country came under the influence of Islam: the Arabic alphabet was adopted and a great number of Arabic and Persian loanwords were acquired. Until recent times this classical Turkish language was in common use throughout Central Asia and acquired not only Arabic borrowings but also elements from the various Turkic dialects. The spoken languages differed to a marked degree from the written language.

Today all Turkic languages are in a new phase of development. In the late twenties the Arabic alphabet, which does not reflect well the actual pronunciation of any Turkic language, was replaced in Turkey by the Latin alphabet. In the following decade a romanized alphabet also was introduced in Soviet Turkestan; this was followed some ten years later by a phonetic Cyrillic alphabet, which is in use today. All these new
alphabets attempt to write the languages as they are spoken. At the same time the influence of the Arabic language is declining both in matters of style and in vocabulary. Many new words of European origin, particularly by way of Russian, are entering the various languages.

As there are a few hundred thousand Uigur speakers living in Soviet Turkestan, in areas adjacent to Sinkiang province, the language there is written in a modified Cyrillic script, which is taught in the schools and employed in the press. However, in Sinkiang province, where the bulk of Uigur speakers live, the Arabic alphabet is still used. But here, too, the trend is away from the traditional Classical Turkish spellings and vocabulary in the direction of the spoken language. Arabic words are being replaced by new coinages, by borrowings from other Turkic dialects, notably Turkish, and from European languages. Since the resources of the traditional Arabic alphabet do not allow for the completely phonetic representation of the Turkic sounds, attempts have been made to reform the alphabet by means of additional diacritical marks and by an arbitrary assignment of new sound values to unused (i.e., peculiarly Arabic) elements of the script. This trend is exemplified in Borhan Shabidi's Uigur-Chinese-Russian Dictionary (1952) and Emir Nadzhip's reader, Ujgurskiy Yazyk (1954). The new system has not fully established itself and thus there is no standardized orthography.

The spoken language of Chinese Turkestan may be broken down into three main dialects: the southern dialects (Kashgar and Yarkand); the eastern dialects (Trumchi and Qomul); and
the northern, often referred to as the Taranchi or Ili, dialect. Historically, the southern dialect of Kashgar is the most important. But today, with Urumchi as the administrative center of the country, and in view of the increasing influence of the Soviets and their numerous publications (essentially in the Ili dialect), the other dialects are making their influence felt on the common literary language. As the employment of modern communications—including highways, railroads, newspapers and the radio—becomes more general in Sinkiang, dialectal differences will probably be leveled out and a generally accepted standard language will eventually result.
PART I

EAST TURKI WRITTEN LANGUAGE

AND THE ARABIC-PERSIAN ALPHABET

1. The East Turki language uses the traditional Arabic alphabet of 28 letters, to which are added four Persian letters چ ژ گ ە, and a fifth of its own devising, چ ە (as ng in singer) called "sağır nun" (literally, "nasal n"). In some texts a digraph چ ە is employed for the sound ng.

2. The complete alphabet of 33 letters appears as follows with the traditional names of the letters and the modern Turkish (Latin) equivalents of the East Turki sounds.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Separate</th>
<th>Final</th>
<th>Medial</th>
<th>Initial</th>
<th>Latin equivalent</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Alif</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>a, ã, e, i</td>
<td>e in Turkish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Be</td>
<td>$\beta$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$\alpha$</td>
<td>$\beta$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>p</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Te</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Se</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>s</td>
<td></td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Jim</td>
<td>$\varnothing$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>c</td>
<td></td>
<td>As i in Jack.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Chim</td>
<td>$\varnothing$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Ҁ</td>
<td></td>
<td>As ch in church.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ha</td>
<td>$\mathfrak{h}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>h</td>
<td></td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kha</td>
<td>$\kappa$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>x</td>
<td></td>
<td>As Ger. ch; h in Turkish.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Dal</td>
<td>$\delta$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Zal</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>z</td>
<td></td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Re</td>
<td>$\mathcal{R}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>r</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ze</td>
<td>$\psi$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>z</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Zhe</td>
<td>$\upsilon$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>j</td>
<td></td>
<td>As z in azure; in loanwords.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Sin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>s</td>
<td></td>
<td>As gh in shut.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Shin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$\varsigma$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>Arabic Letter</td>
<td>Arabic Script</td>
<td>English Sound</td>
<td>Pronunciation</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Sad</td>
<td>ص</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Zad</td>
<td>ض</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Ta</td>
<td>ت</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Za</td>
<td>ظ</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Ain</td>
<td>أ</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>In Arabic words.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ghain</td>
<td>غ</td>
<td>ġ</td>
<td>Like Parisian r.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Fe</td>
<td>ف</td>
<td>f, p</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Kaf</td>
<td>ق</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>k in Turkish</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kef</td>
<td>ك</td>
<td>k, g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gef</td>
<td>گ</td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sağır</td>
<td>ڭ</td>
<td>ñ</td>
<td>As ng in singer; n in Turkish.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Lam</td>
<td>ل</td>
<td>l</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Mīn</td>
<td>م</td>
<td>m</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Nun</td>
<td>ن</td>
<td>n</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Wav</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>v, o, ö, u, ü</td>
<td>v pronounced as English w</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>He</td>
<td>ه</td>
<td>h, ä</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Ye</td>
<td>ي, i</td>
<td>y, i</td>
<td>y as in year</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3. The alphabet consists of signs divided into groups within which the letters are distinguished by dots above or below them. These dots are never omitted.

The writing proceeds from right to left. Traditionally no punctuation is used. However, in modern newspapers the western style of punctuation has been introduced. Sentences end in periods, question marks, or even in exclamation points. Commas and quotation marks are liberally employed, paragraphs are indented, and often words are divided at line-ends.

There are no capital letters. Most letters have four forms--initial, medial, final and independent. The initial and medial forms consist of the first half of the full letter. Both in printing and in writing by hand the letters are joined within the word. However, there are seven letters which do not join to the left, i.e. to the following letter. These are: ﺖ ﺖ ﺖ ﺖ ﺖ ﺖ ﺖ

Some examples:

أوزون uzun long

Some examples:

Confusing to the beginning student are various abbreviated combinations of letters encountered in some texts.

Some examples:
The letter ك k occurs in a dilated form: 
Always when an alif follows lam (ل plus ّ), the two are combined into a letter called lam alif: ﻝ ﻝ

لازم lazim necessary
بلاالار balalar children
بلاالن bilan with

In practice, the student will learn that the shapes of the letters vary considerably from text to text.

5. ADDITIONAL SIGNS USED WITH THE ALPHABET

a. Madda, a horizontal line over alif in the initial position, ﻟ, shows that the alif has the value of a vowel. It indicates a long a and is used with diphthongs. Very often the madda is left out.

🥄 ay month
カテゴリ at horse
؛ ﻟ av hunting
ال ﻟ أvrupa Europe
b. **Hanza** ٌ represents a vowel, particularly one following another, or for a slight pause in pronunciation. It stands over an **alif** َل or a special prop ُّ.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تأثير</th>
<th>impression</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>عائلة</td>
<td>family</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مشكلة</td>
<td>problem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>راديو</td>
<td>radio</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

e. **Tasdiq** ٤٢ is placed over a consonant to indicate its doubling.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>الأول</th>
<th>first</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>همّم</td>
<td>all</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Another way of doubling consonants is by writing the letter twice.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>دولار</th>
<th>dollar</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>همّم</td>
<td>all</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

d. Other marks, rarely encountered, are the following:

1. **Thulth fatha** ١٢ is a mark over a final **alif** to give an -١٢n ending which occurs in adverbs of Arabic origin. More commonly such words are spelled with a nun ۹.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>عرب من</th>
<th>in general</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>عاد تس</td>
<td>customarily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مثال</td>
<td>for example</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-10-
(2) **Silma** is a little circle which is placed over a consonant to show that the succeeding consonant follows directly, without an intervening vowel. See examples below.

(3) The following marks show short vowels as indicated:

- zabär — a or ā
- zir — e or ī
- pes — o, ō, u, or ū

Examples:
- ṣūnd — sånd sugar
- ḫīm — ʿīm science
- ḥźkr — ūkr idea
- ṭl — ʿl money

6. WRITING THE CONSONANTS

From the last Turks point of view the Arabic alphabet contains a plethora of consonants. Four letters, س ص ج ح, have but one equivalent, ڭ : three, خ س م, are pronounced as. The following letters occur predominantly in Arabic and Persian loanwords:

- خزہیک — xizmāt service, duty
- حکوک — hōkūmāt government
- بکیر — bikīr idea
- بام — bām some
However, some of the above letters appear as variants in purely Turkic words:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>English Word</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>أت</td>
<td>at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>صو</td>
<td>su</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تاف</td>
<td>tap</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Some of the consonants occurring in Arabic words have varying pronunciations. It is very important for the student to know the different possibilities for two reasons: first, words sometimes are spelled not in the traditional manner but as pronounced; and second, a knowledge of the actual pronunciation is necessary in order to find words in a modern Turkish dictionary. 1

The consonant 'ain, ع, is encountered only in Arabic loanwords, which are spelled usually as in Arabic. Since East Turki has no equivalent for this sound, it is pronounced in various ways. In the initial position it is rendered by a vowel, rarely as h.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English Word</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>عمكر</td>
<td>army</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مقتل</td>
<td>mind</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عادت</td>
<td>custom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عبارت</td>
<td>sign</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>علاج</td>
<td>remedy, means</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عمر</td>
<td>life</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عرق</td>
<td>brandy</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 See section 33 below for suggestions in using a Turkish dictionary.
Medially and finally 'ain is not pronounced.

مَلَع mā' lum  known
مَلْم māmmu'  forbidden
بَزِي bā' zi  some

The important matter of phonetic variation is dealt with more fully below.

7. WRITING THE VOWELS

The Arabic alphabet provides but poorly for writing the eight East Turki vowels—ə, ɐ, e, i, o, ə, u, & ʊ. The three Arabic letters, ə, i, l which are used, are only approximations. The alif 1 especially in the medial and final position, is used for a and ə. This is true likewise of the initial position in the case of native words, but many Arabic loans have an initial alif that is pronounced i or (less commonly) u/ʊ.

آن at  horse
أدم ṣadīm  man
آرتа arga  behind
آرسى arāsi  between
إيتسات ixtisat  economy
إداراة idarā  administration
هاري hari  saw
هيد urit  hope
8. The alif in the initial position is employed also as a vowel sign; it indicates that a following 
\( \text{j} \) or \( \text{y} = \text{e} \)
has the value of a vowel.

\( \text{y} \) renders \( \text{a}, \text{a}, \text{u}, \text{u} \). There is no way of distinguishing among these vowels. In the case of the sounds \( \text{j} \) \( \text{q} \) and \( \text{k} \)
the former is used with back vowels (\( \text{o}, \text{u} \)) and the latter with front vowels (\( \text{e}, \text{i} \)).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{أون} & \quad \text{اون} & \quad \text{ون} & \quad \text{إيز} & \quad \text{إيز} & \quad \text{k3l} & \quad \text{l3n} \\
\text{on} & \quad \text{un} & \quad \text{an} & \quad \text{iz} & \quad \text{iz} & \quad \text{k3l} & \quad \text{l3n}
\end{align*}
\]

The combination \( \text{yl} \) even in the initial position can give the sound \( \text{w} \), as in \( \text{ملامه} \) \( \text{(m3la} \text{m}) \) to write, \( \text{لل} \) \( \text{لل} \) \( \text{v3ml} \) before, as the \( \text{add} \) \( \text{a} \) commonly is omitted in writing.

\( \text{jl} \) renders \( \text{i} \) or \( \text{e} \) initially, or the diphthong \( \text{w} \).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ياش} & \quad \text{يل} & \quad \text{يس} & \quad \text{يس} & \quad \text{يشرك} & \quad \text{يشرك} & \quad \text{يالنماق} \\
\text{ia3} & \quad \text{el} & \quad \text{is} & \quad \text{is} & \quad \text{a3ik} & \quad \text{a3ik} & \quad \text{um3na} \text{q}
\end{align*}
\]

Medially, \( \text{y} \) without an alif gives one of the vowels \( \text{a}, \text{a}, \text{u}, \text{u} \), or the consonant \( \text{v} \), and \( \text{e}, \text{i} \), \( \text{e} \) or the spirant \( \text{y} \).
Initially, و and ی without alif are consonants.

9. In East Turki two Arabic consonants are used as vowels. The first, the letter یain ی, discussed above, occurs only in words of Arabic origin. The other is the letter ہa ہ. Initially (and sometimes medially between vowels) it is pronounced h (as in English house).

hava ہا
hayda邫ک ہاداک
ehemmiyat اهمیت

yol یول
road, way

yemək یمەک
eat

tväqt وثت
time
The employment of the final and independent forms of ha, as the vowel & not only in the final position but also medially is peculiar to East Turki. The initial & and medial & are never used for this purpose. Ha is never used for initial &. As shown by the following examples (second column), many writers prefer 1 for front a (i.e. 8) in the medial position, though they generally employ ha when the sound & occurs at the end of the stem (note fourth example).

| بلان or برمک or کشیار or هم‌س or اچیده | bilän or bermک or kisilär or hâmâsi or içida | with | give | persons | all of it | inside |

16. In line with the Arabic tradition of omitting short vowels the standard practice in East Turki is to leave unindicated the vowels of closed syllables. Initial vowels and those in open syllables (final vowels) are never left out in writing.

The addition of inflectional endings and derivative suffixes often affects the pronunciation of words, but the spelling of the stem does not change. According to rule, grammatical affixes are separated from the stem; i.e., the last letter of the stem is in the final form. Case endings are written disconnected except when the substantive ends in
a vowel. The plural affix joins the stem ending in a vowel or one of the following consonants: دِرکتار، ایشیکتار، کلیدیم، فلوق. However, many writers do not observe these rules and attach all affixes directly to the stem.

درکتار، ایشیکتار، کلیدیم، فلوق، دِرکتار، ایشیکتار، کلیدیم، فلوق، دِرکتار، ایشیکتار، کلیدیم، فلوق، دِرکتار، ایشیکتار، کلیدیم، فلوق.

It must be stressed that the spelling of East Turki words, both as regards insertion of vowels and handling of consonants, is not standardized. Spelling usage varies not only from text to text but even from sentence to sentence. The tendency is to provide all vowels, to use ə rather than ò for the sound ø (except initially), to indicate double consonants by writing the letter twice, to join suffixes to the stem of the word, and to spell the words (even loans) as they are pronounced.

The student can learn all the peculiarities of East Turki writing by studying various texts. Some practice in reading will prove that inconsistencies of spelling are not as confusing as might be supposed at first.
The following is a sample of East Turki text with transliteration and translation.

Bu balağə nemä berdiq men bu balağə nan bilan çaxı

Bərdim ul adaın sağa nemä berdi ul adaın maqa on pulluq bir

Kirda berdi bu kün toy boladur mu bu kün ul əydə toy boladur

Qurban bek ertə keladur mu qurban bek bukun keladur qadar

Baynine dadası sədəgar kisi dur ul hər kuni bazarda səda

Qırınadur bazarda qara xan bar mu bu jerdə yoq dur bukun dadam

Bazardin xası bir səllə satip aldı dadam maqə kitab köçiz

Elip beradur dədənni bər anasi bar ul meniq goq anam

Bərdim adi Cilmət qəzəribən səzilərədən Ceməribəz
boladur ani hurmat qiləmiz aniq səzilə kiramiz.
What did you give to this child? I gave this child some bread and tea. What did that man give you? That man gave me a ten cent cake. Is there a wedding today? There is a wedding today in that house. Is Qurban Bek coming tomorrow? Qurban Bek is coming today. Qadar Bay's father is a merchant. He trades at the market every day. Is there black dye at the market? There is none here. Today my father bought a nice turban at the market. My father brought me a book and some paper. My father has a mother. She is my grandmother. We respect her. We obey her.

12. OTHER ALPHABETS USED IN WRITING EAST TURKI

In 1928 an alphabet based on the Latin was introduced in Soviet Turkestan for teaching East Turki (called Uigur by the Russians). About 1950 this was replaced by an alphabet based on Cyrillic. As materials in these two alphabets may be utilized by students, they are presented in the following table. Systems of transliteration employed by other authors (Shaw, Vambery, Raquette, Jarring) all differ from one another but present no real difficulties in their use.

A reformed Arabic alphabet has been introduced in Chinese Turkestan and is utilized in Borhan Shähidi's Uigur-Chinese-Russian dictionary (based on Baskakov's original Uigur-Russian work).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reformed Arabic</th>
<th>Soviet Latin</th>
<th>Soviet Cyrillic</th>
<th>Turkish Latin</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>א</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>(ט) church</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ב</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>ב</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>(ד) judge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ג</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>ג</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>get</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ד</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>ד</td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ה</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>ה</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>year</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ו</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>ו</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ז</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>ג</td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ח</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>ח</td>
<td>h</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>י</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>י</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ו</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>ו</td>
<td>j</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ק</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>ק</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>singer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ל</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>ל</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>French pen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>מ</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>מ</td>
<td>m</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>נ</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>נ</td>
<td>n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ע</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>ע</td>
<td>o</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>צ</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>צ</td>
<td>p</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>פ</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>פ</td>
<td>q</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ו</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>ו</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>Parisian r</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>x</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>y</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>z</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>ə</td>
<td>(yo)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>y</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>(yu)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(w)</td>
<td>(x)</td>
<td>å</td>
<td>(yə)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

German: ach
French: sur
(ə) azure
Used in recent loans.

show
PART II

SOUNDS OF THE EAST TURKI

LANGUAGE AND PHONETIC VARIATIONS

13. VOWEL SOUNDS

The East Turki language has eight vowels.

\[ \begin{align*}
  & a & a \text{ as in father} \\
  & ā & ā \text{ as in German männer} \\
  & ē & e \text{ as in French père, or English men} \\
  & ī & i \text{ as in bit} \\
  & ō & o \text{ as in lord} \\
  & ō & o u \text{ as in French preu} \\
  & ū & u \text{ ee as in took} \\
  & ū & u \text{ as French sur}
\end{align*} \]

Generally the vowels are pronounced very short and in unaccented positions are slurred. Long vowels are restricted mainly to Arabic and Persian loanwords, although they occur also in native words as a result of dropped consonants.
14. The vowels are subject to various kinds of phonetic variation. The most important of these are vowel harmony, i-umlaut, unrounding of vowels, labial attraction (or labial harmony), the introduction of inorganic vowels between consonants, and vowel reduction in conjunction with the shift of accent.

These types of phonetic variation occur in the spoken language. They generally are not reflected in the writing, a characteristic of the Arabic alphabet as employed not only in East Turki but in the other Turkic languages, which are very similar one to another. In Turkey, where the Latin alphabet has been adapted to the language, and in the Soviet Union where an alphabet based on the Cyrillic has been devised, the writing attempts to give the language as it is actually spoken. Aside from the fact that even in Eastern Turkestan, where the Arabic alphabet (despite its inadequacies) is still employed, and where the trend is away from the traditional spelling in the direction of the spoken forms of the words, it is essential to become familiar with the major types of phonetic variations in order to make use of Soviet materials in studying East Turki.

15. VOWEL HARMONY

According to the law of vowel harmony, words can contain only back vowels or front vowels. As this applies to grammatical suffixes attached to nouns and verbs, most affixes occur in pairs -- one with back vowels and one with the
corresponding front vowels. Affixes with ə or ı do not change as they attach to either back or front vowel stems.

16. The following table divides the eight vowels into front and back types and labial and non-labial groups. The significance of this latter classification will be explained below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Back</th>
<th>Front</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Non-labial</td>
<td>ə</td>
<td>ą</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Labial</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>õ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>ı</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The table shows three sets of vowels: ą - ą, ın - ı, and u - ũ. The neutral sounds e and i, occurring in words with either back or front vowels, do vary somewhat in pronunciation; this is particularly true of i. E.g., back i: قزیل (Russian КИЗИЛ), red; and front i:, خنچی (Russian КИЧИ), worker.

The law of vowel harmony is often violated, particularly in foreign words and occasionally in native words, most notably with the likeness suffix, -daq and the relative suffix -ki. The following table shows the normal sequence of vowels in accordance with this law.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vowel of stem</th>
<th>Vowel of suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ä</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>u (rarely o, i)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ö</td>
<td>ü (rarely ö, i)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>u (rarely i)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ü</td>
<td>ü (rarely i)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

17. Before giving examples of the paired grammatical suffixes, it must be noted that two sets of consonants are of significance under the law of vowel harmony. The guttural sounds valueOfconsonant (unvoiced) and (voiced) are used only with back vowels; valueOfconsonant (unvoiced) and valueOfconsonant (voiced) are used with front vowels.

18. The following examples present various types of grammatical affixes; it does not, of course, include all that occur in the language. While the final  Valeofconsonant is used here to render the sound of  Valueofconsonant, many writers of East Turki consistently employ Valueofconsonant for the purpose.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Back vowel</th>
<th>Front vowel</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Plural ending: -lar, -lär</td>
<td>Plural ending: -lar, -lär</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیزlar, girls</td>
<td>کیپیلار, persons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Locative ending: -da, -dä</td>
<td>Locative ending: -da, -dä</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>باغدا, in the garden</td>
<td>کۆڵدا, in the lake</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conditional ending: -sa, -sä</td>
<td>Conditional ending: -sa, -sä</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bolsam, if I were</td>
<td>کۆرسنام, if I saw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verb-making affix: -la, -lä</td>
<td>Verb-making affix: -la, -lä</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>گلماق, to hear</td>
<td>تیغلماک, to bite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negative affix: -ma, -mä</td>
<td>Negative affix: -ma, -mä</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلمماق, not to do</td>
<td>کەلماک, not to come</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negative future participle: -ma, -mä</td>
<td>Negative future participle: -ma, -mä</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alleles, not taking</td>
<td>کۆرمیک, not seeing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person imperative: -sun, -sün</td>
<td>3rd person imperative: -sun, -sün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلعون, let him do</td>
<td>قەرەبەن, let him give</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative affix: (d)ur, -(d)ûr</td>
<td>Causative affix: (d)ur, -(d)ûr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلدورماق, to have</td>
<td>توشورکە, to let fall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dative ending: -ğa (-qa), -gä (-kä)</td>
<td>Dative ending: -ğa (-qa), -gä (-kä)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>یولخا, to the road</td>
<td>ئەگەر, to the house</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>باغخا, to the garden</td>
<td>ئیکە, for the dog</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Likeness suffix: -daq (-daq), -đek

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>انداغ</td>
<td>andaq, so, such</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>یشکدیک</td>
<td>یشکدیک, like a donkey</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Past participle: -าน, -اق -ان -کان

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>بولین</td>
<td>boljan, been, become</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>کرگن</td>
<td>korgan, seen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>کتکن</td>
<td>ketkan, gone</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Non-temporal gerund: -اق, -اق

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>گچ</td>
<td>gach, after having given</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Participle of customary action: -اق (-اق), -فک (-کی)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ار گچ</td>
<td>uraq, used to be striking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اگو</td>
<td>kelgach, used to be coming</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Gerundial suffix: -ا (ـه), -ل (ـلی)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تو (ر)ا</td>
<td>taurali, in order to stand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>کرگلی</td>
<td>korgali, in order to stand</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Adverbial suffix: -یشا (ـژیشا), -یی

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>یولیشا</td>
<td>yoliga, up to the road</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>شهر گین</td>
<td>shirgineh, as far as the city</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>شهر (ر)ا</td>
<td>shiragarin, as far as the city</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بو چاگیشا</td>
<td>bu qayqiya, to this time</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Relative suffix: -ی, -ی

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>بو چاگیشا</td>
<td>bu qayqiya, to this time</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Bu saydiki

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>مینگکی</td>
<td>mine</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>of this place</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
19. **I-UMLAUT**

In this type of phonetic variation, a form of regressive assimilation, the sound i (front i) causes a raising of the vowel sounds a, ã, and e to ã, e, or i in the syllable immediately preceding when the accent shifts forward.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>الالم</td>
<td>al take</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>التات</td>
<td>at name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>التان</td>
<td>nan bread</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>البالا</td>
<td>bala child</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الار</td>
<td>är husband</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الير</td>
<td>yer land</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>البيل</td>
<td>elip taken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اتيغ</td>
<td>etiq your name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ناني</td>
<td>neni his bread</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بалиس</td>
<td>balisi his child</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ايري</td>
<td>eri her husband</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ييري</td>
<td>yiri its land</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The vowel change is prevented by a cluster of two consonants

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ياردی</td>
<td>ba(r)di he went</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تایتیپ</td>
<td>qaytip he returned</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>نادمین</td>
<td>dadamdin from my doctor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اشکی</td>
<td>isûkni donkey (acc. case)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

20. **UNROUNDING**

When u or û occurs in a syllable that follows one in which there is a labial vowel (o, o, u, or û), unrounding takes place and results in a non-labial sound, o or û. This is a form of progressive dissimilation that is quite common in
East Turki. Here again the accent is on the last syllable. However, there are many exceptions.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{oğul} & \quad \text{son} \\
\text{otun} & \quad \text{wood} \\
\text{uran} & \quad \text{bed, place} \\
\text{özüm} & \quad \text{myself} \\
\text{bölüm} & \quad \text{section}
\end{align*}
\]

The most common occurrence of unrounding is with one-syllable verb stems containing \(\ddot{a}\) or \(\ddot{u}\) in the form of the past gerund. The second syllable takes an \(a\) or \(\ddot{a}\) rather than the expected \(u\) or \(\ddot{u}\).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{bolup} & \quad \text{become} \\
\text{bolup} & \quad \text{divided} \\
\text{qoyup} & \quad \text{placed}
\end{align*}
\]

21. LABIAL ATTRACTION

Labial attraction, sometimes called labial harmony, is a type of progressive assimilation in which a vowel is rounded under the influence of a preceding labial. In other words, if the stem contains \(o\), \(\ddot{e}\), \(u\) or \(\ddot{u}\), then the vowel of the suffix becomes \(u\) or \(\ddot{u}\) (sometimes \(o\) or \(\ddot{o}\)). This explains the appearance also of labial vowels in derivative suffixes having variable vowels and of \(u\), \(\ddot{u}\) as the connective, or "fugitive", vowel in the possessive endings.
Derivative suffixes

Verbal noun: -ṣ

اروش  ursa  fight  اوراق  strike
پوروش yurṣa  walking  یوره  walk
گوروش korsa  seeing  گوره  see
توروش qopṣa  rising  توپه  rise

Reciprocal: -ṣ

سواتشاق  soqṣmaq:  to strike one another
سوتساچ  soqṣmaq:  to strike one another
اوررشاق  urṣmaq  to strike one another
کورکشک  korsmāk:  to see one another
کورکشک  korsmāk:  to see one another

Collective: -ṣq, -ṣk

پو توک  pūṭīk  writing, document  پو توگلونک  writings
پو توگلونک  pūṭīglūk  writings
قیزیق  qızıq  eager  قیزیلیق  eagerness
دوست  dost  friend  دوستلوق  friendship

Possessive suffixes

golq  your hand
کوزم  my eye

-31-
The 3rd person possessive, however, is not the expected -u, -ü but -i as in "qoli, his hand; kösi, his eye.

Another common example of labial attraction is the change of a, ā to u, ū in the form of the present-future tense:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{bolumən} & \quad \text{I shall become} & \quad \text{bolumən} \\
\text{bolumən} & \quad \text{I shall divide} & \quad \text{bolumən} \\
\text{uçımən} & \quad \text{I shall fly} & \quad \text{uçımən}
\end{align*}
\]

Sometimes the labial consonants v or b in the medial position cause a rounding of the preceding vowel.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{çavap} & \quad \text{answer} & \quad \text{çavap} \\
\text{baba} & \quad \text{grandfather} & \quad \text{baba}
\end{align*}
\]

22. POSITION OF ACCENT AND VOWEL REDUCTION

The normal position of the main stress in East Turki words is the last syllable. When grammatical suffixes are attached, the accent usually shifts to the last syllable of the suffix. However, many words can have the accent on a syllable other than the last, and some affixes never carry the main stress.

Unaccented vowels are reduced in pronunciation both as to length and clearness of articulation. This results in an indefinite vowel and explains some of the phonetic variations that take place. Often these unclear, indefinite vowels are
expressed in writing by means of the letter i.

Ül bala child  باللار balilar children
Dada dada father  دادنیو dadijima also to father

23. INORGANIC VOWELS

As East Turki does not tolerate initial consonant clusters, a vowel is inserted between the consonants or placed in front of the cluster in order to make pronunciation easier in the case of loanwords.

درخت draxt tree pronounced däräch(t)
فرنگی frangī French, European  " forengi or perangī
سوتونگلوف sovtorglot  " sovtorgpolot
تله گرام telegram  " teleqiram
گرام gram  " giram
ایستان ister (Russian stan), trousers

24. OTHER VOWEL ALTERNATION

Many irrational phonetic variations that may be reflected in the spelling of words occur with vowels. The following list does not exhaust the possibilities of vowel alteration within a word.

دههل hül, hul, hel (yöl, yul, yel) wet
اپمک imak, emak  to be
25. DIPHTHONGS

Most diphthongs to be found in East Turki are of the falling type; i.e., the first element is stressed. Rising diphthongs occur in loanwords.

Falling:

\(ay\)

\(bolmaidu(r)\) he will not
\(qaisi\) which

\(ey\)

\(kormaidu(r)\) he sees not
\(agmii\) without opening

\(ey\)

\(heimii\) to dress
\(deidu(r)\) he says

\(oy\)

\(ogoili\) let us read
\(tonoidu(r)\) he knows (someone)
The diphthong au normally is pronounced, and often written, as long o: |aurwa| sada, trade, becomes |aurwa| so:da; |jarw|, hunting, is pronounced o:.

Other combinations of two vowels are simplified in pronunciation; e.g., kooperatif, cooperative, appears as |kapiratip|, kapiratip, and |xwahla|, wish, is pronounced xa:la.

26. **PHONETIC VARIATIONS OF CONSONANTS**

The pronunciation of East Turki consonants, indicated previously in the alphabetical table, presents no special problems as most of the sounds have English equivalents.
But as with vowels, it is important to know the most usual phonetic variations of consonants because these may be reflected in the spelling.

East Turki words are subject to rather more phonetic variation than are other Turkic languages. The most important types will not be overly strange to the student as they are found in many languages. Affixes occur in pairs, voiced and unvoiced, to allow for partial assimilation to the stem. Certain consonants are unvoiced in the final position and voiced between vowels. Final consonants are dropped following other consonants. Complete assimilation can take place resulting in doubled consonants. Certain sounds (r, l, b), when dropped, cause a lengthening of the vowel. Other consonants occur in pairs as variants. And finally, palatalization is characteristic of the language.

27. ASSIMILATION OF CONSONANTS OF AFFIXES

One of the most characteristic phonetic variations of East Turki is the alternation between voicing and unvoicing of the initial consonant of certain grammatical suffixes, dependent on the nature of the final sound of the stem. When a word ends in a voiced sound (either a vowel or consonant), the initial sound of the suffix is voiced. If it ends in an unvoiced consonant, certain suffixes unvoice the initial consonant. Consequently, the consonants divide into the two groups:
Voiced:  b, c (dzh), d, g, ŋ (gh), j (zh), l, m, 
n, ŋ (ng), r, v, y, z

Unvoiced:  q (ch), f, h, k, p, q, s, ʃ (sh), t, x (kh)

These may be paired as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Voiced</th>
<th>Unvoiced</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>b, v</td>
<td>p, f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c (dzh)</td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ģ</td>
<td>q, x</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ţ (zh)</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>z</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Only the following pairs of consonants as the initial sounds of affixes are subject to alternation in attaching to the stem. As noted previously, the two pairs of stopped consonants, g – k and ģ – q, are further subject to vowel harmony: g – k attach to stems containing front vowels and ģ – q to those with back vowels.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Voiced</th>
<th>Unvoiced</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ā</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ģ</td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Ex.: 

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Azerbaijani</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>saqladi</td>
<td>he saved</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>keldi</td>
<td>he came</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ketti</td>
<td>he went</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qizdin</td>
<td>from the girl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bastin</td>
<td>from the head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kungä</td>
<td>to the day</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yolğa</td>
<td>to the road</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>atqa</td>
<td>for the horse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>katkan</td>
<td>gone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tutgan</td>
<td>seized</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kalgän</td>
<td>come</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>saqlagän</td>
<td>saved</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bağda</td>
<td>in the garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qista</td>
<td>in winter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>toldurmaq</td>
<td>cause to fill</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qisturmaq</td>
<td>to infix</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There are a few exceptions to the general rule of consonantal assimilation, notably in the case of the likeness suffix, -dağ (-daq), -däk, where the d is invariable.

ایشک‌که، ک

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Azerbaijani</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>istakdäk</td>
<td>like a donkey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>andağ</td>
<td>like that, so</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-38-
In the word كُلْتُرْمِك, to bring, the causative affix according to the rule should be -دُر.

Affixes beginning with consonants other than the above (ذ - ط, ق - خ, ی - ق) are attached without change to both voiced and unvoiced stems.

Some examples:

Plural suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>اتْلاَر</th>
<th>qوْلْلاَر</th>
<th>atlar</th>
<th>qollar</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>اتْلاَر</td>
<td>قوْلْلاَر</td>
<td>horses</td>
<td>hands</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Collective ending:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>كَاٰشْرَلِيق</th>
<th>يِجْيِتْلِك</th>
<th>كَأْشْرَلِيق</th>
<th>يِجْيِتْلِك</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>كَأْشْرَلِيق</td>
<td>يِجْيِتْلِك</td>
<td>an inhabitant of Kashgar</td>
<td>youthfulness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بِوُكْلَك</td>
<td>نِتْعُلِك</td>
<td>بِوُكْلَك</td>
<td>نِتْعُلِك</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بِوُكْلَك</td>
<td>نِتْعُلِك</td>
<td>writings</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Infinitive ending:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>كُتْمُك</th>
<th>كَأْثِمْك</th>
<th>كُتْمُك</th>
<th>كَأْثِمْك</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>كُتْمُك</td>
<td>كَأْثِمْك</td>
<td>to go</td>
<td>to come</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Possesive case ending:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>مَتْنِي</th>
<th>أَمْنِنِي</th>
<th>مَتْنِي</th>
<th>أَمْنِنِي</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>مَتْنِي</td>
<td>أَمْنِنِي</td>
<td>of the horse</td>
<td>of the man</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Comparative ending:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>مَزْرَاق</th>
<th>مَزْرَاق</th>
<th>مَزْرَاق</th>
<th>مَزْرَاق</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>مَزْرَاق</td>
<td>مَزْرَاق</td>
<td>less, a little</td>
<td>bluer</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3rd person imperative:

کئسون
کئسون
kälsün  let him cone
kätsün  let him go

Diminutive ending:

اتجا
ئچه
پاچجا
aqqa  rather white
neşä  a little
bağga  a small garden

Noun of agent:

توکور شهی
اوته کچی
پچاجی
tögürmänçi  miller
ötmäkçi  intends to pass
piçaqçi  knife-maker

28. FINAL CONSONANTS

a. Unvoicing.

Final consonants, chiefly b, d, and c, and less commonly z, are normally unvoiced in pronunciation. Very often the unvoiced equivalents of these letters are given in the spelling — p, t, q, and s respectively.

Ex.:

کتاب  kitab  book  becomes  کتاب  kitap
اقتصاد  iqtisad  economy  "  اقتصاد  iqtisat
باچ  bac  customs  "  باچ  bac
سۆز  söz  word  "  سۆز  söz
If a vowel is added to the stem, the voicing of the final consonant is preserved.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>كتبم</td>
<td>my book</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اقتصادی</td>
<td>its economy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>باجیده</td>
<td>in his customs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سوزِنوژ</td>
<td>your word</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

b. Dropping of d and t after other consonants.

The letters d and t occurring in the final position after other consonants usually are dropped. This change is commonly retained in spelling.

Ex.:

- کوشت  (koshet)  meat  becomes  کوش  (kosh)  gus
- دوست  (dost)  friend  " دوست  (dost)  dos
- اخوند  (axon)  mister  " اخوند  (axon)  axon
- نجند  (neqand)  several  " نجند  (neqand)  neqan
- اوند  (ound)  flour  " اوند  (ound)  on

Note:  استاد  (ustad)  master  " استاد  (ustad)  usta

Many common native words resist this change.

Ex.:  

- الد  (ald)  before
- لست  (ast)  below
- لست  (ast)  above
c. Change of ق q to خ x.

The letter ق q in the final position and before other consonants ordinarily is pronounced خ x.

Ex.: ِبَرِقَ يُوقَ there is not pronounced يُوَقَ
      وَقَتْ vِقَتْ time " vِقَتْ or وَقَتْ
      اِقْتِنَادَ iِقْتِنَادَ economy " iِقْتِنَادَ
      تَقْسِيمَ تَقْسِيمَ division " تَقْسِيمَ

29. MEDIAL CONSONANTS

a. The letters ن k and ق q.

Final unvoiced consonants tend to become voiced when a vowel is attached to the stem. This is particularly true of the letters ن k and ق q.

Ex.: تَلِيق qِليقَ deed, act تَلِيقَ qِليقَ his act
      تَلِيْكَ qِليْكَ door تَلِيْكَ its door

b. The letter ج / g is not pronounced before consonants or between vowels. This results in vowel lengthening.

Ex.: خَواهَلَا xَوَاهَلَا wish pronounced xِلَا
      صَحِراً sَحِراً village " sَحِراً
      اِشْتَهِرَ aِشْتَهِرَ slowly " aِشْتَهِرَ
      نَهَيْتِي nَهَيْتِي extremely " nَهَيْتِي
      شَهْر sَهْرَ city " sَهْرَ
      جَهَارَتْهِ جَهَارَتْهِ Wednesday " جَهَارَتْهِ
e. The letters ϕ b and ϕ p.

These letters are commonly pronounced v in the medial position. This is true likewise of the final ϕ b and ϕ p which become medial by the addition of a vowel.

Ex.: tarbus watermelon pronounced tavuz
      belbağ belt       belvaq
      alban land-tax    alvan
      köprük bridge    kövrük
      sāhab cause      sovāp
      mābada by chance  mūvada

It is important to note this change as it occurs with the common types of compound verbal expressions such as the following:

ایلاب ایدی oylap edi he had thought pronounced oylividi
satip al buy       setival
کا بریدر ketā beridu(r) he goes away ketiveridu
بریب یاتیدر berip yatidu(r) he gives right now berivatidu
الیب یاتاقن alip yatqan who is taking right now elivatqan

30. THE LIQUID SOUNDS: r and l

a. The letter r.

(1) r is not pronounced at the end of syllables or before consonants. This causes a lengthening of the preceding vowel as indicated in the following:
(2) \( r \) is preserved by a following vowel.

كاشجار بازارى Kushgar bazar
باريدور barida(r) he goes
كيدابرادا in his books

(3) \( r \) is pronounced in all positions in most Arabic loanwords.

حائز hazir at present
زهر zahrur necessary

(4) \( r \) assimilates to a following \( l \).

بارليق barliiq existence pronounced halliq
ضروليق zurrilqi necessity zurrilqi

(5) \( r \) occasionally is pronounced as \( y \).

معالجة rast right pronounced yast
يباركند yarkandi Yarkand yagkand
b. The letter ❧.

The ❧ assimilates to a following ㎡ and is dropped in pronunciation before قبال (q) and باحث sometimes in the final position.

Ex.: قابل 电量 qilmidi *he did not do* pronounced qimmidi

بولمان bolmiyan *not having become* pronounced bommiyan

بولمان boljan *having become* pronounced bojan

كابل kalgan *having come* pronounced kagjan

خلق xalq *people* pronounced xaq (xa:x)

The pronouns ۲ل, this; ۲ل, that; and ۲ل, her, that usually are written and pronounced without the final ۲ل: ۲۲۲۲۲.

31. ALTERNATION OF CONSONANTS

Alternation of certain consonants in pairs occurs both in pronunciation and writing.

a. ق and ق (medial position).

قبَلِتْ قُضِيلْمُق to chase or تولِتْ قَبْلِتْ قُوْلْمُق

قول قَوِلْمُق cold " موق قَوِلْمُق sovaq

b. ن and ن (all positions).

برنینا biringi *first* or نرنینا birinei

باتِه barksa *all* " بارِه barsa

شامان ganvar *animal* " شاپِر ganvar

باچ baq *customs* " بَاج baq
c. b and p (initial position).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{بُتُن} & \quad \text{بُتُن} \\
\text{بُتُن} & \quad \text{بُتُن}
\end{align*}
\]

Quick - Cat

d. \ f and p (all positions).

There is some confusion in writing the sound \( p \). The letter \( f \), occurring in a great many loanwords, is always pronounced \( p \) and sometimes written \( f \) \( p \). On the other hand, the letter \( f \) on occasion renders the \( p \)-sound even in native words.

Ex.: توب top, ball, cannon; item

توبماق to find

topraq earth

پول pul, money

هفتa week

32. PALATALIZATION

Palatalization, the moving forward and raising of consonants in pronunciation, occurs under the influence of front vowels, particularly i.

a. \( y \) becomes \( j \) (as \( z \) in \( azure \)).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي} & \quad \text{ئي}
\end{align*}
\]
The sound of y does not change with back vowels.

\[ \begin{array}{ll}
\text{y} & \text{yah} \quad \text{write} \\
yā & \text{yāt} \quad \text{reach} \\
yō & \text{yol} \quad \text{road}
\end{array} \]

b. k becomes q.

\[ \begin{array}{ll}
\text{kīm} & \text{kim} \quad \text{who} \quad \text{becomes} \quad \text{qīm} \\
kīrmāk & \text{kirmāk} \quad \text{enter} \quad " \quad \text{qī(r)māk}
\end{array} \]

c. t becomes q.

\[ \begin{array}{ll}
\text{tīs} & \text{tooth} \quad \text{becomes} \quad \text{qīs} \\
tīrik & \text{tīrik} \quad \text{living} \quad " \quad \text{qīrik} \\
tūsmāk & \text{tūsmāk} \quad \text{fall} \quad " \quad \text{qūsmāk}
\end{array} \]

d. q inserted between i and k or t.

\[ \begin{array}{ll}
\text{iɪkī} & \text{ikki} \quad \text{two} \quad \text{pronounced} \quad \text{iʃki} \\
\text{iɪt} & \text{it} \quad \text{dog} \quad " \quad \text{iʃt} \\
\text{iɪtīk} & \text{ittīk} \quad \text{sharp} \quad " \quad \text{iʃtīk}
\end{array} \]

Note:

\[ \begin{array}{ll}
\text{pīdā} & \text{on foot} \quad " \quad \text{p(ı)pādā} \\
\text{sag} & \text{hair} \quad " \quad \text{sag} \quad (gag)
\end{array} \]
33. NOTE ON THE USE OF TURKISH DICTIONARIES FOR EAST TURKI

As it will be most practical for the student to find the meanings of most East Turki words in a Turkish dictionary, a few explanations are in order.

a. The following sounds, which do not occur in Turkish, have equivalents as indicated:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>East Turki</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ğ, ğ, e, a</td>
<td>vaqt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>xübar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>kalmak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ÿ</td>
<td>gayri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ÿ (medial,</td>
<td>kağıt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>final)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q</td>
<td>bağ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>x</td>
<td>qirq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>x</td>
<td>halk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>akir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>axsam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q</td>
<td>son</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>maga</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>aqlamaq</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-48-
b. In initial consonants there are found differences as follows, more commonly in words containing front vowels:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>East Turki</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>bermak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>mân</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>muqz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>b, f</td>
<td>but</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>piçaq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>payda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>hafta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>dil</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>toquz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>tolmaq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>gitmek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>kül</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

C. Both languages use hundreds of Arabic words, most in common, which will be found in a large Turkish dictionary. However, as the short vowels, which are regularly omitted in East Turki, are supplied in accordance with pronunciation in the romanized Turkish, and as the unpronounced "ain (ة)" is disregarded, often words are not easy to locate. It is
necessary to try different possibilities of spelling, particularly regarding vowels. Medial ı and ş can appear in a Turkish word in any one of three forms: simple vowel, a consonant (v or y), or part of a diphthong.

d. Study the following examples:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>East Turki</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ملکه</td>
<td>country</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ملکین</td>
<td>possible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مجنون</td>
<td>monkey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ماسبت</td>
<td>connection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مهاجر</td>
<td>refugee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مهاجریه</td>
<td>treaty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>دعوا</td>
<td>quarrel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>هوا</td>
<td>air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اهمیت</td>
<td>importance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>امید</td>
<td>hope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اسم</td>
<td>name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عائله</td>
<td>family</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>نیزه</td>
<td>newspaper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>دولت</td>
<td>state</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>حیوان</td>
<td>animal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>터تو</td>
<td>power</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بر روی -fostering, -loving</td>
<td>-fostering, -loving</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>memleket</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mümkün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>maymun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>münasebet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>muhacir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mushede</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>dava</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>hava</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>chemmiyet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>umit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>isim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ayle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>gazete</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>devlet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>hayvan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>kuvvet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-fosterer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-loving</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>English</td>
<td>Turkish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>house</td>
<td>beyt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strike</td>
<td>vurmak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>statement</td>
<td>beyan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dog</td>
<td>it</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>say</td>
<td>eyt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>big</td>
<td>büyük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>milk</td>
<td>süt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>soviet</td>
<td>sovyet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Austria</td>
<td>Avusturya</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note ε becoming d and t in Turkish.
PART III

INTRODUCTORY: SIMPLE SENTENCE, VERB "TO BE"

34. In the East Turki sentence, generally speaking, the subject stands first and the verb comes at the very end. The sentence expresses a complete thought and must contain a subject and predicate. In the simplest East Turki sentence one word suffices to express an idea and either the subject or predicate is left understood.

Ex.: 

ال al (you) take!
إيوبدان oldan (It is) good.
مغول maqul (We are) agreed.
بار bar (It) exists; "there is"
يوق yoq (There is) not; no.

Usually, however, both subject and predicate are expressed. The subject is a substantive which can be a noun, pronoun, adjective or numeral. Most often the predicate is a verb, but it can be a pronoun. East Turki has noun conjugation, which will be explained in due course.

The following are examples of two-part sentences:

Subject plus verb:

وَلِيْتِ الْخَاطِرَةُ أَهْوَىْ لاَقُرُودُ oquşjaq oquydur. The student is reading.
Subject plus predicate adjective or noun:

Su issiq. The water is hot.
Oy çop. The house is big.
At hayvan. The horse is an animal.
U üçinci. He is the third one.

In the sentences immediately preceding where the subject is in the 3rd person the verb is, in effect, left understood. When the subject is a pronoun in the 1st or 2nd persons the pronoun is repeated and placed in the position of the predicate, i.e., at the end of the sentence. It is translated by the various parts of to be. This might be termed a "copulative pronoun" and is an example of noun conjugation. Examples:

Mən amerikanlıq mən. I am an American.
Biz oquyüzilər biz. We are students.
Sən kə DLL RAN. You are strong.

35. Another type of simple sentence consists of subject, predicate and one or several complements. Complements include direct objects, indirect objects and various kinds of adverbial expressions. Unlike the substantive used as subject, which does not take a case ending, complements occur in the oblique cases and are characterized by special endings. These are:
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Ending</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Function 1</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Accusative</td>
<td>-ni 2</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>Direct object</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dative</td>
<td>-ya (-qä)</td>
<td>to, for;</td>
<td>Ind. obj.; adv. complement (motion to)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-ga (-kä)</td>
<td>into</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Locative</td>
<td>-da (-ta)</td>
<td>in, on</td>
<td>Adv. comp. (location)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-da (-tä)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ablative</td>
<td>-din (-tin)</td>
<td>from</td>
<td>Adv. compl. (motion from)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Word order in a three-part sentence is: subject, complement (direct object or adverbial expression), predicate.

**Direct object as complement:**

من كتابي الذي.
Mən kitapni aldım. I took the book.

آدم ابني أسلادور.
Ädäm atini atasdor. The man is selling his horse.

اولار بيزن كوردی.
Ular bizni kordi. They saw us.

بيز نان يميز.
Biz nan yeymiz. We eat bread.

---

1 Case functions are fully considered in Sec. 52 following.
2 The accusative case ending is omitted with direct objects that are indefinite in nature: Section 55 below.
Adverbial expression as complement:

من شهرک بارم.
Mən şəhərk bərəm. I am going to the city.

خانوون اویکه کئنی.
Xotun oyqə ketti. The woman went into the house.

او قاشقا بئوردو. ائو قاشقادа تئوردر.
U Qaşqarda turudur. He lives in Kashgar.

اوسته لئده کئب بار.
Üstəldə kitab bar. There is a book on the table.

بئیز مکاپئین کئل ژیئیز.
Biz mektəptin keldimiz. We came from school.

Word order in a four-part sentence: subject, indirect object or adverbial complement, direct object, predicate.

In sentences with two objects the indirect object is in the dative case; source of the direct object is in the ablative case.

ئیخین دئهئینا چایدوز بئره.
Leylə dəxərən qabduq bərdi. The worker gave some equa ment to the peasant.

ئیم نیئیکه کئب اوتئیز بئوردو؟
Kim siyaqə kitap oquq bəridər? Who is reading the book to you?
I received this letter from my father.

What did you want of me?

I sent the information to the inn.

He took the letter off the table.

General adverbial expressions of time and place stand before the subject at the very beginning of the sentence.

The workers are not working at the factory today.

In summer out in the country the peasants work hard.

Thus, the normal word order of the simple East Turki sentence may be summarized as follows: adverbs of time and place -- subject -- adverbial complement or indirect object -- direct object -- verb.

This word order can be altered for emphasis by moving any element of the sentence nearer the verb at the end of the
sentence. The predicate is the governing element of the sentence and carries the logical stress.

All parts of the sentence can have modifiers before them. This does not affect the basic word order. (See Section 85 for order of modifiers.)

ایکز تاغلا ترادر. Uyarádá egiz tağlar turadur. High mountains stand there.

او یکز تاغلا باردی. U egiz tağlarğa bardi. He went to the high mountains.

او بدان اوغوجی اخیر این بیيم اوغول. Obdan ogujugu egiir iśni yıldam ıslədi. The good student quickly did the difficult task.

36. INTERROGATIVE SENTENCE

There are two types of interrogative sentence:

a. With the interrogative particle, ؟ mu, which is attached to the word (either a noun or verb) that the speaker intends to emphasize.

ایشچی مو سن؟ Igţi-mu sən? Are you a worker?

سیزله اوغوجی مو؟ Sizlər ogujı-mu? Are you students?

اوغوجی مو سیزله؟ Ogujı-mu sizlər? Do you have bread?

تان بار مو؟ NaN barmu? Is there bread?
37. THE VERB "TO BE"

East Turki does not have a verb "to be", as such. It expresses this idea in the present by means of a "noun conjugation" wherein the personal pronouns, repeated at the end of the sentence, serve as the copula. They are used in this manner with all types of substantives—nouns, pronouns, adjectives and numbers. Their use in the formation of certain tenses will be presented later. Tenses other than the present of "to be" are formed by means of auxiliaries چاپ emmek, to be, and يئلاق bolmaq, to become, to be.
38. The personal pronouns are:

من  
män  
I

سن  
sän  
you (singular)

او (ول)  
u (ul)  
he, she, it

بیز  
biz  
we

سیز (سیزره)  
siz (sizlar)  
you (plural)

اولر  
ular  
they

39. Note that in the following paradigms "biz" as copulative pronoun may occur in the form "miz" and that the 3rd person pronouns, "u" and "ular", are not utilized in this manner but are replaced by "dur" (which often is omitted).

Predicate adjective:

من اوبدان من  
män obdan män  
I am good

سن اوبدان سن  
sän obdan sän  
you are good

او اوبدان (دور)  
u obdan (dur)  
he is good

بیز اوبدان بیز (میز)  
biz obdan biz (miz)  
we are good

سیز اوبدان سیز  
siz obdan siz  
you are good

اولار اوبدان (دور)  
ular obdan (dur)  
they are good

-60-
Predicate noun:

من أتونوجي من
män oğuçuğu män
I am a student
سن أتونوجي سن
sän oğuçuğu sän
you are a student
او أتونوجي (دور)
u oğuçuğu (dur)
he, she is a student
بيز أتونوجي بيز
biz oğuçuğu biz:
we are students
بيز أتونوجي ميز
biz oğuçuğumiz:

سيز أتونوجي سيز
siz oğuçuğu siz:
you are students
سيزلر أتونوجي سيزلر
sizlär oğuçuğu sizlär:

اولار أتونوجي (دور)
ular oğuçuğu (dur)
they are students

Predicate pronoun:

من کیم من
män kim män
Who am I?
سن کیم سن
sän kim sän
Who are you?
او کیم (دور)
u kim (dur)
Who is she, he?
بيز کیم بيز
biz kim biz:
Who are we?
بيز کیم ميز
biz kim miz:

سيز کیم سيز
siz kim siz:
Who are you?
سيزلر کیم سيزلر
sizlär kim sizlär:

اولار کیم (دور)
ular kim (dur)
Who are they?
When ﷲ dur is used in the 3rd person, it emphasizes the idea of definiteness.

In contrast to this, the auxiliary verb, ﷳ ekên, denotes indefiniteness and is used with all persons. It stands between the substantive and copulative pronoun. ﷳ ekên, if translated at all, may be rendered by a parenthetical expression such as "it seems," "it appears," "they say," and the like.

من كچئلوق ایکان من mēn kuşluq ekên mēn I am, it seems, strong
سن كچئلوق ایکان سن sēn kuşluq ekên sēn You are, it seems, strong
او كچئلوق ایکان u kuşluq ekên He, she is, it seems, strong
بیژ كچئلوق ایکان بیژ biz kuşluq ekên biz We are, it seems, strong
بیژ كچئلوق ایکان مین biz kuşluq ekên min: } We are, it seems, strong
سیز كچئلوق ایکان سیز sīz kuşluq ekên sīz You are, it seems, strong
سیز كچئلوق ایکان سیزlar sīzlar kuşluq ekên sīzlar: } You are, it seems, strong
اژر كچئلوق ایکان uler kuşluq ekên They are, it seems, strong
41. The simple past definite of to be is expressed by the stem یَدَ, edi- plus the following affixes:

\[
\begin{align*}
I & \quad -m \\
you \ (\text{sing.}) & \quad -q \\
he, \ she & \quad -
\\
we & \quad -q \\
you \ (\text{plu.}) & \quad -qiz \\
& \quad -qlär \\
they & \quad -
\end{align*}
\]

These endings are derived from the nominal possessive suffixes. As the function of these affixes will be explained later, suffice it now to state that they are equivalent to English possessive adjectives: my, your and our. The 3rd person, singular and plural, again takes no ending and 1st person plural, \(-q\), is a special verbal form (unlike \(\text{edîz, mis, our},\) which is joined to substantives).

Past definite of to be:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{mân} \ 	riangledown \ \text{edi} & \quad I \ \text{was} \\
\text{sân} \ \triangledown \ \text{edî} & \quad \text{you \ were} \\
u \ \triangledown \ \text{edi} & \quad he, \ she \ \text{was} \\
\text{biz} \ \triangledown \ \text{edî} \ (\text{edîq}) & \quad \text{we \ were} \\
\text{sîz} \ \triangledown \ \text{edî} & \quad \{ \\
\text{sîzlär} \ \triangledown \ \text{edîlär} & \quad \text{you \ were} \\
\text{ular} \ \triangledown \ \text{edi} & \quad \text{they \ were}
\end{align*}
\]
The negative of all types of noun conjugation is expressed by the negative auxiliary verb mən, əmäə. This auxiliary, as well as ən əkən, and ən ədi ədəd, come from the defective verb ən əmäə (or ən ən ərəmäə), to be.

The negative auxiliary stands directly after the substantive; i.e., it is first in order of the verbal elements when there are several. E.g., mən oğluçəqe emäə ekən edim: I was not, it seems, a student.

With emäə the copulative pronouns may be omitted.

Present negative of to be:

| نن ایه س (من) | mən əmäə (mən) | I am not |
| سن ایه س (سین) | sən əmäə (sən) | you are not |
| ار ایه س | u əmäə | he, she is not |
| بیز ایه س (پیژ) | bizi əmäə (biz): | we are not |
| بیز ایه س (پیژ) | bizi əmäə (miz): | } we are not |
| سیز ایه س (سیژ) | sizə əmäə (siz): | you are not |
| سیز لر ایه س (سیژ لر) | sizəlär əmäə (sizəlär): | } you are not |
| اولار ایه س | ular əmäə | they are not |

With predicate noun or adjective:

| نن افرئق ایه س (من) | mən ağriq əmäə (mən) | I am not sick |
| سن افرئق ایه س (سین) | sən ağriq əmäə (sən) | you are not sick |
 او اغريق ایمه س
u ağrıq emäs  

he is not sick

بیز اغريق ایمه س (بیز / میز)
biz ağrıq emäs (biz/miz)  
we are not sick

سیز اغريق ایمه س (سیز)
siz ağrıq emäs (siz):

} you are not sick

سیزله ح اغريق ایمه س (سیزله)
sizlär ağrıq emäs (sizlär):

اولار اغريق ایمه س
ular ağrıq emäs

they are not sick

Negative of past definite:

من ایمه س ایدیم
mün emäs edim  
I was not

سین ایمه س ایدینک
sün emäs ediğ  
you were not

او ایمه س ایدی
u emäs edi  
he, she was not

بیز ایمه س ایدیق
biz emäs ediğ  
we were not

سیز ایمه س ایدیگیز
siz emäs ediğiz:

} you were not

سیزله ح ایمه س ایدیگیز
sizlär emäs ediğlär:

اولار ایمه س ایدی
ular emäs edî  
they were not

- 65 -
Negative of past indefinite with predicate noun or adjective:

من اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدم
mən oquğuqi eməs edim
I was not, it seems, a student

ئس اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدیک
sən oquğuqi eməs edin
you were not, it seems, a student

ئر اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدی
ər oquğuqi eməs edi
he was not, it seems, a student

ئئز اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدیق
bəz oquğuqi eməs edin ədiq (eduq)
we were not, it seems, students

ئئز اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدیق
səz oquğuqi eməs ediq ədiq:
you were not, it seems, students

سیزان اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدیگ
səzən oquğuqi eməs ediq:
sizleri oquğuqi eməs edilər:

ئلار اوتونجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ایدی
əlar oquğuqi eməs edə
they were not, it seems, students

Other forms are built up similarly:

من اوتینجو ایم‌س ایدیم
mən üçinci eməs edim
I was not (actually) third.

ئئن اوتینجو ایم‌س ایگ‌ک ن (من)
mən üçinci eməs edən (mən)
I am not, it appears, third.
43. IMPERSONAL EXISTENCE: "THERE IS"

The idea of simple existence and non-existence is expressed by the two words:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{بار} & \quad \text{there is, there exists} \\
\text{요ق} & \quad \text{there is not}
\end{align*}
\]

The following examples show how they are compounded with the auxiliary verbs نکانی \( \text{نکانی} \) \( \text{ئیدی} \), and the interrogative particle, \( \text{می} \), \( \text{مین} \). \( \text{پاپ} \), \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \), \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \), is used with compounds of the negative particle \( \text{هیچ} \) \( \text{هیچ} \), which makes indefinite pronouns and adverbs:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{مان بار.} & \quad \text{There is bread.} \\
\text{بایند مین بار مون؟} & \quad \text{Is there fruit in the garden?} \\
\text{قل برق.} & \quad \text{There is no money.} \\
\text{ارپیده دل برق ایکان.} & \quad \text{It seems there is no money in the house.} \\
\text{سو برق و.} & \quad \text{Is there no water?} \\
\text{سو برق ایدی.} & \quad \text{There was no water.} \\
\text{ارپیده هیچ کم برق.} & \quad \text{There is no one at home.} \\
\text{هیچ نرسک برق.} & \quad \text{There is nothing.}
\end{align*}
\]

بار, and \( \text{پاپ} \), \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \), \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \), and \( \text{پاپ} \), \( \text{پاپ} \) \( \text{پاپ} \), play important roles as auxiliaries in the formation of various tenses and express ownership in the sense of to have (see section 48).
PART IV

NOUNS

44. There is no grammatical gender in East Turki. Pronouns do not distinguish gender; e.g., ʒ̟, ʒ̟, means he, she, it, or that.

The gender of living beings is expressed descriptively.

Ex.

ʒ̟ bala child
ʒ̟ ər-bala: ʒ̟ ər man
ʒ̟ oğal-bala: ʒ̟ oğal son
ʒ̟ qiz-bala girl ʒ̟ qiz daughter

45. East Turki does not employ a definite article. The numeral ʒ̟ bir, one, is sometimes used as an indefinite article. It comes between the adjective and the noun modified; e.g., ʒ̟ yeği bir layihä, a new draft. This use of the indefinite article results from Turkish influence.

46. The plural sign is ʒ̟ -lar, -lar. It is attached to nouns but not to their modifiers.
With the plural sign on the noun it is usually felt unnecessary to put it also on the verb. There is a tendency to affix لlar on verbs the subject of which is a living being.

Ex.

Kitap qiziq. The book is interesting.

Kitaplar qiziq. The books are interesting.

Balalar çok durlar. The children are big.

Därəxtlər çok dur. The trees are big.

Numbers are followed by substantives in the singular.

Ex.

beş adam five men
on arabə ten wagons
yuş oşker a hundred soldiers

Arabic loanwords usually form the plural in the Arabic manner.

Ex.

xəbər news axbar (or xəbərlər)
ahl situation ahləvələr
hayvan animal hayvanat (or hayvanərlər)
47. POSSESSIVE SUFFIXES

All substantives can affix possessive suffixes which are equivalent to English possessive pronouns. They consist of a connecting vowel plus the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Affix</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-m</td>
<td>my</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-q</td>
<td>your (sing.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-(s)i</td>
<td>his, her, its</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-miz</td>
<td>our</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-qiz</td>
<td>your (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-(s)i</td>
<td>their</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The -si form of the 3rd person (singular and plural) attaches to stems ending in a vowel.

The usual connecting vowel is i. However, if the stem has a labial vowel, ū or ā is inserted (except with the 3rd person).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>لداس</th>
<th>دادا</th>
<th>father</th>
<th>باغ</th>
<th>bag</th>
<th>garden</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>دادام</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>my father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>bagim</td>
<td>my garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>داداق</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>your father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>bagiq</td>
<td>your garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>داداتس</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>his father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>bagi</td>
<td>his garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>داداتیز</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>our father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>bagimiz</td>
<td>our garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>داداتیز</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>your father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>baginiz</td>
<td>your garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>داداتس</td>
<td>دادا</td>
<td>their father</td>
<td>پارک</td>
<td>bagi</td>
<td>their garden</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The possessive suffixes are used also with the plural stems.

Ex.

- balalar - children
- balalarım - my children
- balaların - your children
- balaları - his, her children
- balalarımız - our children
- balalarınız - your children
- balaları - their children

The use of the possessive suffixes on nouns modified by other substantives is of prime importance (see section 59). The possessive suffixes are employed also on adjectives and numbers used as substantives to show their relationship to unstated antecedents (see sections 84, 88).
In combination with bar, there is, and yoq, there is not, the possessive suffixes denote simple possession or lack of possession; i.e., "to have," or "not to have". As indicated in the following examples, the possessive suffix functions as the subject and the noun as the object possessed.

قўй sheep

ئوبوم بار qoyum bar I have a sheep
توبوم بار qoyuq bar you have a sheep
توبى بار qoyi bar he, she has a sheep
توبومى بار qoyumiz bar we have a sheep
توبىنىز بار qoyuniz bar you have a sheep
توبى بار qoyi bar they have a sheep

دول pul money

ئولوم ىوق pulum I have no money
ئولوكى ىوق puluq yoq you have no money
ئولى ىوق puli yoq he, she has no money
ئولومىز ىوق pulumiz yoq we have no money
ئولوكىز ىوق puluqiz yoq you have no money
ئولى ىوق puli yoq they have no money

In sentences of this type the noun (the object possessed) may be in the plural and the predicate, of course always in
the 3rd person, may be compounded forms of "bar and "yoq.

Ex.

Goylari bar eķn. They have (he has),
• қўйлари бар ақлкан it seems, some sheep.

Vaqtim barma? Do I have time?
• қўрм бар, м?

Atlari bar edi. He had some horses.
• қўшлари бар қўдий

Pulunji-mu yoq edi? Did you not have money?
• қўлунжид му қўр қўдий?

If the possessor is not expressed by a pronoun (given as the possessive suffix) but by a noun, that noun is usually in the genitive case and stands before the object possessed. It can also be in the locative case.

Ex.

Bu kining puli yoq dur.: This person has no money.
• бо кінинг пулани пул яққан дур.

Bu kigida puli yoq dur.: This person has no money.
• бо кигидан пул яққан дур.

Note: In some tenses bol- may be used for bar; e.g.

• қўл унча бор қўнча яққан дур.
Menin pulum bolsa, atalar edim. I would buy a horse.

-74-
49. All of the above examples stand as independent sentences. This construction occurs also as a noun modifier. Thus used, it is equivalent to a relative clause in English.

Ex.

قلی بار ادالمار بزارگا باردي. Puli bar adamlar bazariga bardi.  The men who have money went to the bazar.

پرى يوق کشیلم رهبداد تورآدور. Yari yoq kisilik gaharda turudur. People who have no land live in the city.

باکاری بار خاترون ایشله بدور. Balalari bar xotun isleydur. The woman who has children works.

اون بیکر م ادالم بار جایدا اون بیکر م قسم طبیعت بولدور. On yigerma adam bar oydada on yigerma qismi tabiyat boladur. There will be ten or twenty tastes in a place where there are ten or twenty people.

50. NOUN DECLENSION

Besides the possessive suffixes there is a second set of affixes placed on all types of East Turki substantives. These are the case endings. They are attached directly without connecting vowels to singular and plural stems. As indicated below, they are equivalent to prepositions in English.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Ending</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genitive</td>
<td>-nig</td>
<td>'s, of</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Accusative -ni
Dative -ğa (-qa)
-ga (-kä) to, for, into
Locative -da (-ta)
-dä (-tä) on, in, at
Ablative -din (-tin) from

Ex.
Singular
Nom. یل the child یرل the children
bala balalar

Gen. یل of the child یرل of the children
balanig balalarniq

Acc. یل the child یرل the children
balani balalarni

Dat. یل to, for the child یرل to, for the children
balağa balalarğa

Loc. یل on, in the child یرل on, in the children
balada balalarda

Abl. یل from the child یرل from the children
baladin balalardin
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xät</td>
<td>xätler</td>
<td>xätlin</td>
<td>xätlin</td>
<td>xätqa</td>
<td>xättda</td>
<td>xältin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the letter</td>
<td>the letters</td>
<td>of the letters</td>
<td>of the letters</td>
<td>to the letter</td>
<td>in the letter</td>
<td>from the letter</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

51. The possessive suffixes are used with all cases, singular and plural, and are inserted between the plural sign and case ending. The order of affixes is: stem, plural sign, possessive suffix, case ending.

Ex.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nom.</th>
<th>Gen.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sözüm</td>
<td>sözümlär</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>my word</td>
<td>my words</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
52. FUNCTIONS OF THE CASES

53. NOMINATIVE CASE: no ending.

The nominative case primarily indicates the subject of the action implied or expressed by the verb.

It answers the question: who? what?

Ex. من كنتم. I went.
   Məa kettim.

ياز بولدی. It became summer.
   Yaz boldi.
54. GENITIVE CASE: -niš

The genitive case denotes possession or ownership of one object over another. The possessor has the case ending, -niš, and stands in the position of the modifier before the object possessed. The object possessed has on it the possessive suffix. This is felt to strengthen the relationship between the two.

The case ending, -niš, is equivalent to the preposition of, or possessive ending -'s.

It answers the question: whose? of whom? of what?

Ex.

ادمنیق ائی ایکیزده توردو. The man’s horse is in the field.

Adəmnin əti etizdə turudur.

اوئنیق ایکیز تاماری. The high walls of the house.

Öynin egiz təmları.

اوئلیه رهیقیز تاماری. The walls of the houses.

Oylarnik təmları.

With pronouns in the genitive, the possessive suffix varies according to person.

Ex.

منیق دادام سهندین کلی. My father came from town.

Menin dədam şəhərdin kəldi.
Our father is old.

Their father saw us.

55. ACCUSATIVE CASE: -ni

The accusative case expresses the direct object which bears the action directed on it by the subject of the sentence.

The direct object is directly governed by the predicate which must be a transitive verb. Normally the direct object stands immediately in front of the verb.

The direct object occurs in two forms:

a. With the -ni suffix it denotes a specific object. Proper nouns, personal pronouns, nouns modified by demonstrative adjectives are all considered specific and therefore always take the -ni ending when used as direct objects. Also, if the direct object is separated from its normal position immediately before the predicate, it must have the accusative case ending.

Ex.

He took the apple.

He struck Musa.
They saw us.
Ulар бири көрді.

We sold these horses.
Biz бұл атларны сатты.

I drank tea today at Sadir’s house.
Бұғым мен ғағыні Садырнің өйінде ікім.

b. A direct object without the -ni suffix (a form identical with the nominative) denotes an indefinite object. In translation this object is often preceded by the indefinite article, or "any" or "some".

Ex.

• қыз бөлік
He took an apple.
У алыс алып.

• ұлар атлар көрді
They saw some horses.
Ulар атлар көрді.

• ұлар атлар сатмайдырміз
We do not sell (any) horses.
Biz атлар сатмайдымыз.
56. **DATIVE CASE:** -jä (-qä), -gä (-kä)

The dative case denotes motion, expressed or implied, toward something. The noun in the dative case is the object or point in space or time toward which the action is directed.

Ex.

من شهرک باراین.
Män şehärğä barimän.

خاتون اویقه کانت.
Xotun ʃyğä ketti.

\[ \text{Dost başqa bagar, düşmän ayagga bagar.} \]
A friend looks at the head, an enemy looks at the feet.

Other functions of the dative case:

a. In sentences with two objects the indirect object is in the dative case.

Ex.

من داداشنا ایکی خن خط پتودی.
Män dadašıga ikki xat putudim.

ابنین دمانتنا جابدوق بردی.
Işği aexanšıga calduq berdı.

کیم سودارتکلی ابتردی?
Kim sodegärşı pınu iberdi?

I wrote two letters to my father.

The worker gave some equipment to the peasant.

Who sent the money to the merchant?
b. The dative case expresses the purpose for which an action is carried out.

Ex.

Biz suğa və otunğa kettimiz.  
*We went for water and wood.*

Dadasi Sadirğa bu pulni ötkök bərdi.  
*His father gave Sadir this money for (the purpose of getting) some boots.*

c. The dative case expresses the price of something after such words as "to buy," "to sell," "to cost," and the like.

Ex.

Adəm inəgini on bəş sərgə sətti.  
*The old man sold his cow for fifteen sar.*

Bu kitablarnı bəş təğətlə aldım.  
*I bought these books for five tenga.*

d. The dative case is used to express a period of time for which something is given or appointed.

Ex.

Yoldaşım pulni bir ağa aldi.  
*My comrade took the money for one month.*
Many words govern the dative case. Here are a few examples.

• ارتثگیا تارشٰی
  Uninga qargi.  *Against him.

• خبِرگی کوره
  Xabargi kore.  *According to the report.

• بو کمیکا ارمخاش
  Bu kigig oxpaq.  *Like this person.

• بئریشگه مجبور
  Berishg maebur.  *Necessary to give; lit., "necessary for giving".

57. LOCATIVE CASE: -da (-ta), -dā (-tā)

The locative case expresses the condition or state of an object in a definite place. It locates the action in space or time. In contrast to the dative and ablative cases which denote motion, the locative conveys the idea of a static condition.

Ex.

• سیزینگ اورقوردو، تیه جان بار؟
  Sizning oyqorodu, tiyeh jan bar?  *How many people are there in your house?

• یازدا هوا اپسیق بولدر.
  Yandboxa hava issiq bolidur.  *In summer the weather becomes hot.
This year.
Ba yılda.

In six months.
Altı ayda.

On the table.
Üsteldi.

At home.
Çılda.

On me, in me, with me.
Menínda.

58. ABLATIVE CASE: -din (-tin)

The ablative case denotes motion, expressed or implied, away from or out of something. It suggests removal. The noun in the ablative case is the starting point in space or in time of the action.

Ex.

He took the book off the table.

I fell off my horse.

Ör. Allah'tan kâbiş elâ'dez
Ü üsteldini kâtipni aldı.

Mân atımdan düştüm.
The soldiers escaped from the enemy.

Four persons came out of the inn.

That man lives far from the city.

Other functions of the ablative case:

a. The ablative expresses source or material out of which something is made. It expresses a part of a whole.

Ex.

The shopkeeper buys goods from peasants.

The bridge is constructed of wood.

One of the sheep ran away.

b. The ablative expresses cause where one condition arises out of another.

Ex.

Many Chinese died of disease.
e. Certain words govern the ablative case. The following post-positions are typical.

Ex.

- سیدین باشک
  Sizdin basqa.  
  Besides you.

- بیر ایدین برو
  Bir aydin beri.  
  One month ago.

- بیش یلدیز ایلگری (بورون)
  Bən yildin ilgiri (burun).  
  Five years before.

- اون هفته دین کین
  On həptedən keyin.  
  After ten weeks.

Note: In the case of a series of coordinate expressions, only the last takes the required case ending.

Ex.

- بچکون من صادیبوا هم تاییرنگ کردم
  Bugün mən Sadır, Musa həm Tayırni kərdüm.  
  Today I saw Sadir, Musa and Tayir.

59. NOUNS AS MODIFIERS

As in English, nouns in the nominative and genitive cases are used to modify other nouns. Such modification expresses not a characteristic of the word modified but its relationship to the other object. This relationship in East Turki is formally indicated by the possessive suffix attached to the
word modified. There are three types of noun modifiers.

a. With the modifier in the genitive case (-niŋ) it shows direct possession.

Ex.

ایتقيق باشی
Atniŋ başi. The horse's head.

یارنی اگیسی
Yärniŋ āgīsī. The owner of the land.

ۆریینە‌تەڵەری
Öyniŋ tomlari. The walls of the house.

b. With the modifier in the nominative case (no ending), it shows a relationship in a general sense. The genitive modifier, as above, expresses a particular, solitary relationship between the two objects and is translated into English usually by means of the possessive ending, -'s, or the preposition of.

As shown in the following examples, the nominative modifier is translated either as an adjective or as the first element of a compound noun.

Ex.

اتباقی
At başi. Horse-head.

یار ایگس
Yär āgīsī. Land-owner.
With the modifier in the nominative case and the possessive suffix omitted from the word modified.

In this type of noun modification the first element of the compound is material out of which the second part is made or is a basic function of the object.

Ex.

1. تومور يول
   Tümür yol.
   Railroad ("iron road").

2. بالاج كويروك
   Yalğa köprük.
   Wooden bridge.

3. تاش كومور
   Taş kömür.
   Hard coal ("rock coal").

4. باش اداره
   Baş idarə.
   Head office.
60. NOUN DERIVATIVE SUFFIXES

The following are the most commonly used derivative suffixes which, when attached to noun stems, form secondary stems with new meanings.

a. -ğî: agent

ايش  iş  work  ايش  iş  worker
ابگاک  bagak  labor  ابگاکی  bagakî  laborer
تومر  tomur  iron  تومرچی  tomurçî  smith (*iron-worker*)
باليق  balîq  fish  باليقبی  balîqî  fisherman

Note: Certain suffixes of Arabic and Persian origin are used similarly in forming nouns of agent: دار -dar, 
بن -ban, گر -gür, کیر (-kîr).

دوكان  dukan  shop  دوکاندار  dukanîbî  shopkeeper
قریش  qaraq  debt  قریش  qarîb  debtor
باغ  bag  garden  باقبان  baqîb  gardener
سودا  suda  trade  سوداگر  sudaqîb  tradesman
باچه  baco  customs  باچکر  bacoqî  customs officer

b. -liq, -lik: collective

(1) Name of profession is derived by attaching the collective suffix to the noun of agent.

tomurçî  smith  تومرچیلیک  tomurçîlîk  trade of smith
پاختچی  paxtaqî  cotton-raiser  پاختچیلیک  paxtaqîlîk  cotton-raising
چوردار  çarvardar  cattle-raiser  çarvardarlıq  cattle-raising
An extended use of the suffix ـيلىق is in the formation of abstract expressions such as the following:

كۆپ köp much كۆپچەئەک کۆپچەئەک majority
ارزان arzan cheap ارزانچەئەک arzançiliq cheap prices, cheapness
tirik living تیریکچەئەک tirikçiliq life, livelihood

(2) Attached to a noun signifying place, this suffix denotes *inhabitant*.

کاشخر Qäşqar Kashgar کاشخرچەئەک qäşqärliq inhabitant of Kashgar
شەڕ gär city شەڕچەئەک gärliq a city inhabitant
سەڕا sëra village سەڕاچەئەک sëraliqlíq villager

(3) Abstract nouns are derived both from adjectives and concrete nouns.

Adjectives:

یەکين yaxši good یەکینچەئەک yaxšiliq goodness
چاپسان qapšan speedy چاپسانچەئەک qapšaniqliq speed
زۆر zor strong زۆرچەئەک zorluqlíq force
یەکسنیز issiz without work یەکسنیزچەئەک issizliq unemployment

Nouns:

düşmanın enemy دۇشماينچەئەک düşmänlik enmity
eğäk owner اگەکچەئەک egilik ownership
bë ana mother بەناچەئەک analiqlíq motherhood
(4) This suffix (along with its negative equivalent, 
\textit{siz}, without) is used to make adjectives of nouns. 
See sections 82, 83.

c. \textit{-e} is used as a diminutive:
\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{bag} garden \textit{bag} little garden
  \item \textit{a} house \textit{a} little house
\end{itemize}

d. \textit{-dag} denotes "fellow" or "one that accompanies":
\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{yol} road \textit{yoldag} traveling companion, 
  comrade
  \item \textit{a}aركچ} back \textit{a}арقد} assistant, comrade
\end{itemize}

e. \	extit{-dək} denotes likeness or comparison of one thing or 
person to another.
\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{tömrədək} like iron, "iron-like"
  \item \textit{kümürədək} like silver
  \item \textit{sizədək} like you
\end{itemize}

Ex.:
\textit{Toz bulutdək boləp, tüğümən igidə uğatti.}
\textit{Dust like a cloud floated inside the mill.}

Note: This idea can also be conveyed by the post-position
\textit{oxşas}, which governs the dative case:
\textit{ədamən oxşas}, \textit{adəmə ya oxşas}. Like a man.
a. Ordinary collective nouns which usually are singular in form express the totality of two or more objects, such as the following: گاریک, army (or soldier); پادا (پتا), herd; بالی, fish; تومر, iron; چفت, pair.

b. The following type of collective nouns denotes things that occur in pairs, mostly parts of the anatomy of living beings. Singular in form, they are either singular or plural (i.e. two) in meaning.

Ex.

کوز  
کول
organ  
organ
 کول
organ  
organ

ایاق  
ایاق
foot, feet; leg, legs

اترک  
اترک
boot, (pair of) boots

c. The third type of collective nouns, much used in East Turki, consists of paired words of similar meaning.

Ex.

ئاکتا  
ئاکتا
father  
father

ئاکنا  
ئاکنا
mother  
mother

ئاک نا  
ئاک نا
parents  
parents

ئار  
ئار
existence  
existence

ئار  
ئار
non-existence  
non-existence

ئار  
ئار
bar-yoq, everything that there is, goods and chattels  
bar-yoq, everything that there is, goods and chattels
ot grass  qed  qop hay
13-32  qed  qop hay, fodder

3 la  bala  child  bala-oqa  babe
3 la  bala-oqa
3 la  yar  or bala-harqa  family

3 yemis  fruit
3 yal-yemis  fruit

3 kayim  clothing
3 kayim-kezek  clothing

Some words are used only in compounds, and their original meaning is obscure.
PART V

PRONOUNS

62. PERSONAL PRONOUNS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>من mān</td>
<td>بیز bīz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سن sīn</td>
<td>سیز sīz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>او یا اول (ul)</td>
<td>یا اول یا یالار یالار (ul)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The third person pronouns او یا، and یالار، also are used as demonstratives: that, those.

In polite language سیز siz is used in addressing a single person and the form سیلار sizlār (pronounced sīlā or sīlā) for more than one person. Also، بیز bīzlār، we, occurs.

Ex.

او کسی کیم ایکاں؟
U kisi kimi ekha?
Who is that person?

سیلار شر اونیں کیرو سیلار؟
S(iz)lā(r) ēu soni körims(is)(iz)lā(r)?
Do you see that house?
In the declension of the personal pronouns note in the following paradigm final -n dropping before the n- of the suffix, the addition of n with the pronoun ٢٠٦٠, and the assimilation of ی to preceding n.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>nominative</th>
<th>genitive</th>
<th>accusative</th>
<th>dative</th>
<th>locative</th>
<th>ablative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mān</td>
<td>san</td>
<td>u(l)</td>
<td>biz</td>
<td>siz</td>
<td>ular</td>
<td>ularin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meniq</td>
<td>seniq</td>
<td>uni</td>
<td>bizniq</td>
<td>sizniq</td>
<td>ularniq</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meni</td>
<td>seni</td>
<td>uni</td>
<td>bizni</td>
<td>sizni</td>
<td>ularni</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maqa</td>
<td>sapa</td>
<td>unqa</td>
<td>bizqa</td>
<td>sizqa</td>
<td>ulargya</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mānda</td>
<td>sānda</td>
<td>unnda</td>
<td>biznda</td>
<td>siznda</td>
<td>ulardāa</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>māndin</td>
<td>sāndin</td>
<td>undin</td>
<td>bizdin</td>
<td>sizdin</td>
<td>ulardin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3rd person singular, ٢٠٦٠, may have the following variants.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>nominative</th>
<th>genitive</th>
<th>accusative</th>
<th>dative</th>
<th>locative</th>
<th>ablative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>eniq</td>
<td>uniq</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eni</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aqa</td>
<td>eniqiya</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>anda</td>
<td>eniqda</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>andin</td>
<td>eniqdin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
64. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

The personal pronouns in the genitive case are used as possessive pronouns. The object possessed takes the appropriate possessive suffix.

Ex. meniŋ oyüm my house
seniŋ oyʊŋ your house
uniŋ oyı his, her house
biiziŋ oyʊmiz our house
sizniŋ oyʊmiş your house
oliŋiŋ oyı their house

The object possessed can be in the plural and in any case: meniŋ atlaɾiðin, from my horses.

65. Absolute possessive pronouns are formed by the addition to the above forms of the relative suffix, -ki (that which; see sections 80, 81).

meniŋki mine
seniŋki yours
uniŋki his, hers
biiziŋki ours
sizniŋki yours
oliŋiŋki theirs

These may occur in the forms: meniki, seniki, uniki, bizniki, sizniki, ularniki.
This construction applies also to interrogative and demonstrative pronouns: کم, who? نیما, what?
قايس, which? بع, this, شو, that.
کینئیکی, whose (*belonging to whom*)
نیمایئیکی, whose, of what
قاوسینئیکی, whose, of which
بئینئیکی, of this
شونئیکی, of that

Ex.

پر ای, کینئیکی؟
پر ای, کینئیکی?
Bu oý kimniği? Whose is this house?

پر ای, منئیکی.
پر ای, منئیکی.
Bu oý menğik. This house is mine.

66. DOUBLE CASE

A double case occurs with pronouns used as adverbial complements. One of the case endings denoting space relationships--dative, locative, ablative--is attached to the possessive pronoun (i.e. to pronouns in the genitive case.)

Ex.

من سنئیگین خت کوتوب هارديم. I tiired of waiting
Män seniğin xat kötûp hardim. for a letter from you.

A double case is used also with demonstrative pronouns when the antecedent is not expressed.

Ex.

شونئیگا ارخشان. Like that.

Şunînga exşap.
67. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

There are three basic demonstrative pronouns:

- $\nu$ bu this
- $\nu$ gu that
- $\nu$ u that yonder

$\nu$ bu and $\nu$ gu are declined as follows. Note the variant forms of $\nu$ bu where $m$ replaces the initial $b$ in the oblique cases.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>$\nu$ bu</th>
<th>$\nu$ gu</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>$\nu$ bu</td>
<td>$\nu$ gu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>$\nu$ bu $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acr.</td>
<td>$\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>$\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loc.</td>
<td>$\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abl.</td>
<td>$\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u $\nu$ u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
68. Other demonstrative pronouns are compounds expressing varying degrees of nearness. The following two are much used:

\[ \text{mugu} \quad \text{this (specific)} \]

\[ \text{guba (ugba) this very, the given} \]

The following are encountered less frequently:

\[ \text{mana} \quad \text{this, "voici"} \]

\[ \text{nd} \quad \text{that, "voila"} \]

\[ \text{tanu} \quad \text{that there} \]

\[ \text{annu} \quad \text{that way out there} \]

\[ \text{mavu} \quad \text{this right here} \]

\[ \text{avu} \quad \text{this here (farther)} \]

\[ \text{bavu} \quad \text{that there (still farther)} \]

\[ \text{manavu} \quad \text{this here} \]

\[ \text{ananu} \quad \text{that there} \]

\[ \text{manunu} \quad \text{that yonder (far)} \]

\[ \text{muru} \quad \text{this here} \]

69. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

The most common interrogative pronouns are:

\[ \text{kim who?} \quad \text{ninu what?} \]

-100-
Other interrogatives (both pronouns and adverbs) are formed on the stems ئار, which? and ئار, what?
Most of the following are used also as adverbs.

ئار which, how
ئار which, who
ئار which, who
ئار how much, how many
ئار where, which
ئار how much, how many
ئار how many

76. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

The numeral ئار, one, and ئار, each, every, are important in forming indefinite pronouns. The particle ئار, not at all, is used with the negatives.

ئار someone, somebody
ئار something
ئار some, several, few
ئار some, several
ئار some, certain
ئار some, few
ئار everybody, each
hēr kim each
hēr nimā everything
hiq kim (hiq bir kim) nobody
hiq nimā (hiq bir nimā) nothing
hiq bir qanda none whatsoever
hiq bir qaysi (hiq qaysi) none, none at all
hiq bir qandaq (hiq qandaq) none at all

kisi one, a certain, individual
bir kisi someone
hēr kisi each one
kimārq someone
hēr kimārq someone, whoever
nārsā (nimārq) something, thing
hēr nārsā (hēr nimārq) everything, anything whatsoever

The above list of course does not include all indefinite pronouns that are in use. Some others that are widely used are:

bēsi some
bēsi bir everything, anything
gai (gahi) some, certain
niqāna some, several
The possessive suffixes are often used with َّهَلَل َبِرَّ, one, and َهَّمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل, all.

َهَلَل َبِرَّ (بِرَّ) َبِرَّ َبِرَّ (بِرَّ) َبِرَّ َبِرَّ (بِرَّ) َبِرَّ (بِرَّ) َبِرَّ َبِرَّ َبِرَّ َبِرَّ َبِرَّ (بِرَّ)

ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل َبِرَّ ِهِلَل

َهَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل َهَمَلَلَل

71. REFLEXIVE PRONOUN

The pronoun َلَل َلَل is used both as modifier and as substantive. As a modifier it is translated own.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>اوز اوی (من اوزوم)</th>
<th>اوزک (سن اوزوم)</th>
<th>اوزی (او اوزی)</th>
<th>اوزیمز (مست اوزیمز)</th>
<th>اوزیزیز (سیز اوزیزیز)</th>
<th>اوزیزیز (او اوزیزیز)</th>
<th>اوزیزیز (او اوزیزیز)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>özüm (mın özüm)</td>
<td>özü (cin özü)</td>
<td>öz (u öz)</td>
<td>özümiz (biz özümiz)</td>
<td>özügiz (siz özügiz)</td>
<td>özügiz (cin özügiz)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I myself</td>
<td>you yourself</td>
<td>he himself, she herself</td>
<td>we ourselves</td>
<td>you yourselves</td>
<td>they themselves</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Ex.:

- "ezmemiň aowomde. At my (own) house.
- "ezminiq dadasiga. For his father.
- "ezminiq aowomde. From our own horse.
- "atam ezemin körde. My father saw me.
- "siz ezminiq zyan. You brought harm upon yourselves.
- "eziniz otürde. He killed himself.

Note: Often the reflexives are used by way of emphasis in place of the ordinary personal pronouns.

- "atam ezemin körde. My father saw me.
PART VI

ADJECTIVES

72. Adjectives are not distinguished in form from nouns or adverbs. As modifiers they stand in front of the word modified. Adjectives do not agree either in number or case with the noun.

There are two categories of adjectives: qualitative and relative.

73. QUALITATIVE ADJECTIVES

Qualitative adjectives express the property or characteristics of an object directly without reference to any other object. They can be compared by means of the suffix راَك، راَك, -رَك (-er or more) in the comparative degree and the particle مل يلك (least or most) in the superlative degree.

74. COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Comparative</th>
<th>Superative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>يخشى</td>
<td>يخشى راَك</td>
<td>ذو يخشى</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>جَيَّس</td>
<td>جَيَّس راَك</td>
<td>جَيَّس ذا</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-107-
Ex.

چوغرئق اوی تاشین پاسالمان.
Gograq oý tæstin yazalýan.
The bigger house is made of stone.

اوخل بالا چوغرئق اویچگئید
Ojgal-bala gograq șyzga yuðurii.
The boy ran into the bigger house.

غیز اوی چوگئین جیگئین
Giz oý goŋ öýdin yiq蒂.
The girl came out of the biggest house.
75. OBJECTS OF COMPARISON

In a sentence where one object is compared to another, the object being compared is in the ablative case. In such a sentence the case ending -din, -tin is translated than. Very often the comparative suffix is omitted from the adjective.

Ex. تاش نو گورن خموتون شهريگي خوه (چوگرگان). The city of Kashgar is larger than the city of Khotan.
Bu arabas ꦓゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥゥeteranganen

76. ADDITIONAL METHODS OF COMPARISON

The word تاتي, still, more, standing before the adjective, is used for the comparative degree in place of the suffix ـراک. This is similar to the English usage as in more beautiful, more beneficial.

Ex. چیخاناتاکیا لیکن تاش تانین. Wood is hard but
Yatag qatig lekin tasp taxi qatig. stone is harder.
The ablative case is used in two other ways in expressing the superlative degree.

a. The case ending دین -din, -tin is attached to the adjective, which is then repeated: قیمتین قیمت qimmātān qimma, the most valuable (lit., more valuable than valuable); یارسین یارسی yarsīdin yarsī, best (lit., better than good); یکسیرین یکسی yaksīdin yaksī, newest (newer than new).

b. The word همه hāmmā, all, in the ablative case همه دین hāmmadin, than all is equivalent to the particle ذی dī and like it stands in front of the adjective.

Ex.

همدین قیزیل hēmmedin qīzīl reddest (reddest of all)

همدین سویق سو hēmmedin suyq su the coldest water (water the coldest of all)

77. EMPHATIC DEGREE

There are two ways of expressing emphatic degree (or the absolute superlative which implies no comparison): by re-duplication and by means of a separate word modifying the adjective and translated very.

a. Either the adjective is merely repeated (see first example), or more commonly a special prefix is formed of the first syllable of the adjective closed with the letter ی - y.
Ex.

جوك $\text{goq}$ big 
جوک $\text{goq}$ or $\text{goq-goq}$ very big

اباق $\text{aq}$ white 
اباق $\text{appaq}$ very white

کورک $\text{kuk}$ blue 
کورک or کورک $\text{kopkuk}$ or کورک $\text{kopkuk}$ very blue

یاجی $\text{yajgi}$ new 
یاجی $\text{yajjegi}$ very new

تلولا $\text{tola}$ much 
تلولا or تلولا $\text{toptola}$ very much

Note: 
เชים $\text{cim}$ quiet 
เช้ม $\text{cimocit}$ very quiet

b. Among words denoting very are: 

یانیन $\text{yanan}$, bad; 
nayiti, extremely; 

تلولا, much; 
kop, much.

Ex.

یانین جوک $\text{yanan goq}$ very big

ناییتی بای $\text{nayiti hay}$ very rich

پک کمیتیل $\text{pek kambital}$ very poor
LIMITED DEGREE

Three adjectival suffixes denote the limitedness of the qualities expressed by the adjective and are usually translated rather.

a. Sometimes the regular comparative suffix \( \dddot{d}/\dddot{r}/ \) \( -\dot{r}\hat{a}q, -\dot{r}\hat{a}k \) expresses the idea of rather.

Ex.

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{kum} & \text{little} \\
\text{kâmrâk} & \text{less}
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{kâmbâjâl} & \text{poor} \\
\text{kâmbâjâl\dot{r}aq} & \text{rather poor}
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{yoq} & \text{not} \\
\text{yoq\dot{r}aq} & \text{nothing at all}
\end{array}
\]

b. The diminutive suffix:

\[
(\text{kipet\khat\khat} \quad \text{kipet\khat})
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{ginâ} & \text{ginâ} \\
\text{ginâ} & \text{ginâ} (-\text{gina}, -\text{kina})
\end{array}
\]

Ex.

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{pâs(t)} & \text{low} \\
\text{pâs\dot{r}kinâ} & \text{rather low}
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{ki\dot{r}ik} & \text{small} \\
\text{ki\dot{r}ikkînâ} & \text{rather small, somewhat}
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{uzun} & \text{long} \\
\text{uzun\dot{r}ina} & \text{rather long}
\end{array}
\]
c. The suffix جاق -q denotes inclination to, or aptitude for, something. It is attached to nouns to make adjectives as well as to adjectives.

Ex.  

uzun  uzunqaq  long rather long ("inclined to be long")

Note:  

oy thought  oyqaq  thoughtful ("inclined to thought")

oyan  oyanqaq  game playful

79. RELATIVE ADJECTIVES

Relative adjectives are derived from other substantives by means of suffixes: كي -ki, the one that and ليق -liq, that having. Relative adjectives express a property of an object by means of another object. Such adjectives cannot be compared.

Besides the above two types of relative adjectives, the noun modifier (without ending) giving the material out of which the object is made is employed in a similar manner.

Ex.

• تخته كيپورک  Taxta köprük. The plank bridge.
• تاس اوی  Taş öy. The stone house.
• بالات بياق  Palat pigaq. A steel knife.

See sec. 59 (c) above for additional examples.
ADJECTIVES WITH THE RELATIVE SUFFIX -ги (-qi), -ги (-ki)

This suffix is affixed to subdivisions of time (which may be merely implied as in the first two examples) and has a meaning "that of," "that relating to" and very often is translated by the possessive form of the primary word.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>حاضر</td>
<td>now</td>
<td>hazırki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كین</td>
<td>after</td>
<td>keyinki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بوگون</td>
<td>today</td>
<td>bugünki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بولتر</td>
<td>last year</td>
<td>bolturki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>یاز</td>
<td>summer</td>
<td>yazmiŋki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>کون</td>
<td>day</td>
<td>küngi daily</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

When this suffix is attached to nouns in the genitive case it denotes ownership. This form usually occurs as a predicate.

U terä çimniŋki? Adümniŋki. (It is) the man's.
81. The relative suffix is very often attached to the locative case of nouns denoting time or place. It is written داکی or, increasingly often as pronounced دیکی دیکی, diqi. It expresses the situation of an object in a definite place or in a specific period of time.

شەهەردیکی municipal, the city's

gëshërdiki

اویدیکی domestic, that belonging
doğëdiki
to the house

مەسکاوەدیکی تورتوچیلار. The residents of Moscow.

حەوادیکی توەلار. The birds (who are) in the air.

حەوادیکی ڤوشلار. Havadiki quşlar.

پایژیکی ایش. Sumzer work.

Yazdiki iş.

This form with the 3rd person possessive suffix, is used a substantive and takes the plural suffix and case endings.

اویدیکیله رەی Those belonging to the

Oydikilari. house, domestics.

I bought some sugar for those at home.

من اویدیکیله رویکە تەنارەیەم. I bought some sugar

شەهەرەکەییبیرین گەنتەلەم. for those at home.
ADJECTIVES WITH THE RELATIVE SUFFIX -liq, -lik

This suffix is affixed to noun stems and has the meaning "that having," "that possessing," "that which has," "he who has." Very often the corresponding English adjective ends in the suffix -ful or -able, or is merely a noun used as an adjective. If the primary noun is an abstract expression, the derived adjective can be compared.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>يار</td>
<td>land</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يارليك</td>
<td>having land, landed; local</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سو</td>
<td>water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سولوق</td>
<td>having water, watery</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كوس</td>
<td>power</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كوسليك</td>
<td>having power, powerful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>پيدا</td>
<td>profit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>پيداليق</td>
<td>profitable, useful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>برار</td>
<td>harm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>برارليك</td>
<td>harmful</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ex.

آت كوسليك دم ويداليق حيوان. The horse is a powerful animal.
At کوسليک هم ويداليق بير حيوان, and useful animal.

پيرليك ادام كدي. The land-owning man (or, the man who has land) came.
يارليک ادام كلم. The land-owning man (or, the man who has land) came.

كوسليك پوده تسلیم تومانان. Daily mail delivery...
Kuslik posta teslimi tescil edildi. has been established.
83. THE NEGATIVE SUFFIX -siz.

This suffix attached to noun stems denotes the lack of or absence of something, "that not having," and is the negative equivalent of the suffix, -liq, -lik. Usually it is translated by "without," an adjective ending in -less, or with a negative prefix such as in-, im-, un- and the like.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{at} & \quad \text{horse} & \text{atsiz} & \text{without a horse} \\
\text{yär} & \quad \text{land} & \text{yär-siz} & \text{without land} \\
\text{küç} & \quad \text{power} & \text{küç-siz} & \text{powerless} \\
\text{iş} & \quad \text{work} & \text{iğ-siz} & \text{unemployed} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Ex. برس و ايشس كشياء آچ پرادي.  
Yär-siz và iğ-siz kişilik lar aç boldi.  
Landless and unemployed individuals became hungry.  
(Individuals who are without land and without jobs...)

اکگرین كودین ي باليق لا يمسين.  
Ağak-siz köldin ma heliq alalmaysun.  
Without work you cannot take fish even out of the lake.

-117-
Adjectives can be used substantively and take case endings, the plural ending and the possessive suffixes.

When used as nouns, adjectives always have attached the possessive suffix, -(ə)i, as an indicator of relationship to an antecedent either expressed earlier in the sentence or merely implied. Usually in the English translation the word "one" will follow the adjective: ُالله أريدانارجا, for the best ones, or for those who are best.

Ex.

ئو همه سنیک چرئی. यह सबसे बड़ा है।

Bu həmməsini gömü. This is the biggest one (of all).

تاغلاردا هار تئرلیک گول تولا تئیپلارلарدن من اوردان بيلین

کوكلهرى بائلا ماهلی اییاس.

Taglarda här tərlik gül tola, qızıllarını mən otdan
biləmən, kökləri məşə məlum əmənə.

Taglarda hər tərlik gül tola, qızıllarını mən otdan
biləmən, kökləri maşın məlum əmənə.

In the mountains there are many flowers of every type,
(of which) I know the red ones well (but) the blue
ones are unknown to me.

اوغلو و سئی تاغلارى تئوچ تئریره من اوژوم یئپلره کوكليه

بایرامن افیئارليه تئییمەز یئپ بارامیز.

O'jam mən qazələrni tutap tərəf, mən özüm yenilərəklərinə
apparımən, eşğələrin işkimə apparımən.

Son, you hold the bags; I myself will carry the lighter
ones, and the two of us will carry the heavy ones.
ORDER OF MODIFIERS

When a noun has before it modifiers of various types, these are arranged in a certain order.

In the nearest position is the modifier expressing the most basic and essential property of the word modified. Modifiers progressively farther express more variable and chance characteristics.

1st, noun modifiers in the nominative case (which actually make up close-knit compounds):

\[
\text{سرا خوچولوئي sara xoculuqi \quad agricultural economy}
\]

2nd, adjective modifiers:

\[
\text{اویدان کتاب obdan kitap \quad a good book}
\]

3rd, numeral modifiers:

\[
\text{اون اویدان کتاب on obdan kitap \quad ten good books}
\]

4th, demonstrative pronouns:

\[
\text{بی اویدان کتاب bu on obdan kitap \quad these ten good books}
\]
5th, verbal modifiers:

من الكتاب اون اوبان كتاب
mən alğan on obdan kitap
the ten good books
that I bought

6th, finally, in the position farthest removed from the word modified, possessive noun modifiers:

ملكتيку بى دايم اوسودورүн کۆچکە سرا ایکلیکە
mümlikatnīg bu dayim ösüdīğän küçüq sara egiliki
this continually growing strong agricultural economy
of the country.
PART VII

NUMERALS

86. CARDINAL NUMBERS

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{bir (bij, biy)} & \quad \text{one} \\
\text{ikki (iški)} & \quad \text{two} \\
\text{tört (tä)} & \quad \text{four} \\
\text{bäg} & \quad \text{five} \\
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{alı (alı) } & \quad \text{six} \\
\text{yättä } & \quad \text{seven} \\
\text{säkkiš } & \quad \text{eight} \\
\text{töq̄üşu } & \quad \text{nine} \\
\text{on } & \quad \text{ten} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Note that the ten's through hundred are special numbers:

\[
\begin{align*}
yiğirmä & \quad \text{twenty} \\
(jiğirmä) & \quad \text{thirty} \\
\end{align*}
\]
ترق forty
gırq  
تَوْسَان ninety
toqsan

الپه fifty
ällik  
يُؤُز hundred
yüz

العشر (تَسْبِيح)
sixty
a(l)miş  
مِلْيًّون thousand
miq

یتِمیش seventy
yebmiş  
میلیوْن million
milliyon

سُکَسان eighty
süksân

The compound numbers are formed by combining the cardinal numbers in descending order, from the larger units to the smaller. They are written separately.

اون بِر on bir eleven
eleven
اون ایکی on ikki twelve
اون توْقَز on toqquz nineteen
اون توْقَز on toqquz twenty-one
توْسَان توْقَز ninety-nine
toqsan toqquz

یوُزٌ ایج yüz üç 103
87. Western numbers are increasingly used but it is necessary to know the Islamic numbers. Note that, contrary to the script, numbers read from left to right.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Turkish</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>sıfır</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>bir</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>iki</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>üç</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>dört</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>beş</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>altı</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>yeddi</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>sekiz</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>toğrul</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>on</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>ikiyüz</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>üçyüz</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>dörtyüz</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>beşyüz</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>on bir</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>ikiyüzikki</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>üçyüzüttüsüç</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
a. Numbers stand in front of the word modified, which is always in the singular. Numbers used as modifiers are invariable and do not agree in case with the following noun.

Ex.: پئش کیس کلی Five people came.
Bئسل کیسی کلیدی.

I received letters من پئش کندین خطلاار الیدم.
Mئن بئس کیسی کلیدین ختلاار علیدی.
from five people.

We returned پئس یلیک بئس کندین کین تاپیردی.
Bئس یلیک بئس کندین کین تاپیردی.
after 55 days.

b. Numbers when used substantively take the possessive suffixes and can have any case ending.

Ex.: Ikkimiz يکیمیز بئگه پاردیق The two of us
Ikkimiz bئگه پاردیق.
left together.

اله سائی کلی Six (of them) came.
Altئسی کلی.

I saw six.
اله سائینی کسیدم.
Altئسینی کسیدم.

c. In giving numbers of things certain terms are used following the numeral in the sense of "pieces" or "units."

-175-
Among these are: 

- daňa grain; 
- ʈal vine; 
- baş head; 
- tôp top ball. 

Any person is used similarly with living beings.

Ex.:

- đug baş qoy. Three (head of) sheep.

- yattă tal dărăx(t). Seven trees.

- bir daňa alma. One apple.

- bāş nępăr adm. Five men.

99. ORDINAL NUMBERS

There is a special numeral suffix, -nç i, or -nç i, which is attached to the cardinal number in order to make ordinal numbers. This suffix is equivalent to the English suffix, -th.

Ex.:

- birinci first
- ikkinci second
- onunci (oninci) tenth
- ottuzunci (ottuzinci) thirtieth
The suffix is attached to the very end of a compound number: بُتُم مِلَة انْه بِزْوَانِي 5600th.

Ordinal numbers are used in giving the year:

bir مِلَة توْلُز يَِّر الْإِلْك يَِّسْتَحْنِي يَِّل (year of) 1955

Note in the preceding example that the noun يَِّل yil, does not take the possessive suffix, -i, as the ordinal number is an adjectival form.

90. FRACTIONS

Special fractions, much used, are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>يِرِم</td>
<td>half</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِرْك</td>
<td>quarter</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Less commonly used:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>نِسْب</td>
<td>half</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رُبْك</td>
<td>quarter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سِلْك</td>
<td>third</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Other fractions are compounds with the common denominator in the ablative case and the numerator with the possessive suffix attached:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>يِتَنْم يِتَم</td>
<td>üçün biri 1/3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يِتَنْم يِكْس</td>
<td>üçün ikinci 2/3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يِتَنْم يِسْم</td>
<td>üçün üçüncü 3/10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-125-
91. DISTRIBUTIVE NUMERALS

The ablative case ending is attached to numbers to form
distributives translated by expressions such as: at, per, each,
apiece.

Ex.: اوندين انا
ondin alma ten apples apiece

نناً بر وقغ دين الدنم.
Nan bir təğgədin aldim. I bought bread at one tenga each

کیزال تارم سردين الدنم.
Gəşnəl yerim sərdin aldim. I bought goods at a
half sər per (meter).

92. COLLECTIVE NUMERALS

The suffix لاـن -lən, is attached to the cardinal numbers
to make collectives which are used substantively.

بیرلəن birlən together
ایکیلəن ikkilən both, the two, pair
ارچه یله نəşıлən the three, trio
پک یله نəşıлən the five

Note:

ایکیلəمیز ikkiləmiz the two of us
ارچه یله نəسئیمیز the three of us

-127-
Less often encountered are collective numerals, equivalent to the above, which utilize the suffix ـُـأ: مِرَأَو, مِكَٰكَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, مِكَٰمَو, etc.

93. NUMERAL ADVERBS

There are a few commonly used numeral adverbs made by means of the suffixes: ـُـن, ـُـن, and ـُـن.

Ex.: مِرَيْنِيِكِكٰ مِرَيْنِيِكِكٰ

birin ikkin by one's and two's

مَأَرَ مَأَرَ مَأَرَ

birar singly, by ones

لَأَرَ لَأَرَ لَأَرَ

łar by three's, each three

تُرَأَ تُرَأَ تُرَأَ

törtar each four

The word مِكَٰمِمٰ qatim, نَفَهَّ qatifka times, and مِكَٰيَ مُكَٰيَ yol, are used to express times as in the following:

مَمٰ مَمٰ مَمٰ

bír qatim once

مَمٰ مَمٰ مَمٰ

ikki qatim twice

مَمٰ مَمٰ مَمٰ

ikki yol twice, two times
94. WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

Although the metric system is increasingly used in Chinese Turkestan, it is still necessary to know the following terms. پاتمان patman, is also used as a measure of land.

Weights:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Weight</th>
<th>Equals</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>پاتمان</td>
<td>573.44 kg</td>
<td>8 گایبر (bu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>گایبر</td>
<td>71.68 kg</td>
<td>3 گارک</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>گارک</td>
<td>8.96 kg</td>
<td>16 سیغ (lb.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سیغ</td>
<td>560 gr.</td>
<td>16 سر</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سر</td>
<td>35 gr.</td>
<td>10 مسقل</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مسقل</td>
<td>3.5 gr.</td>
<td>10 تیغ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیغ</td>
<td>.35 gr.</td>
<td>2 نوحش</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Long measure:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Equals</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تاش</td>
<td>25 یول (.5 kilometer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>یول</td>
<td>300 یول اسک (fathom)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>یول اسک</td>
<td>3 گاز (yard)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>گاز</td>
<td>4 گاز اسک (span)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
95. **MONETARY TERMS**

The official monetary unit is: دلار (Chinese) dollar. The most common term for money in general is پول/pul, a small copper coin. Other monetary terms that might be encountered are:

- سر sar silver coin
- تاغی taggā copper coin
- یارماق yarmaq money in general
- ناقدینه naqdinā money on hand, cash
- رقیق aqqā paper money, money in general

The following tables give the names and relative values of the locally circulating silver and copper coins. The actual values vary from place to place. Besides being the names of coins, the terms also denote weights.

**Silver:**
- چنوبی cambu equals 5 کیانه köyna
- کویری köyna " 5 to 10 سر sār
- سر sār " 10 مسقال جلفā

**Copper:**
- گوینه goyna equals 20 تاغی taggā
- تاغی taggā " 50 پول pul
96. Most simple adjectives can be used as adverbs without change in form. As adverbs they are placed before the verb modified. They are compared in the same manner as adjectives.

Ex.:

ايردان اوتوبوجي ايردان كايار ايردان اوتوبودور.

Obdan oqujucu obdan kitaplar obdan oquydu.
The good student reads good books well.

Qattiq avaz. A loud voice.

Qattiq qiqqirmaq. To scream loudly.

بر ايشين بايشراق تيليك. Do this task better.

Bu isni yaxsirag qiliq.

Qattiqraq aytiq. Speak more loudly.

Cuvabinginal tashpak berin. Send your reply more promptly.
97. **INVARIALE ADVERBS**

The following are among the most commonly used simple adverbs:

- **سْوْگُن** (سوگا)  
  after

- **کین (کین)** (کین)  
  keyin  after, later, then

- **بُرُون**  
  burun  before

- **اوْلُ**  
  ûyvûl  before, earlier

- **بَالْدُور**  
  baldur  before, earlier

- **اَيْدُن**  
  emdi  now

- **يَنا**  
  yana  still, again

- **تَخِنَّي**  
  texi  still, again, more

- **حَشَر**  
  hazîr  now

- **قَاَشٗن**  
  qâsên  when

- **بُرٗوُن**  
  bügûn  today

- **تُونَهُ كُون**  
  tûnâgûn  yesterday

- **الوْشٗوْن**  
  ulûskun  day before yesterday

- **اِتْرَهُ**  
  ârta  in the morning, early

- **يُولُوْتُر**  
  bolôr  last year

- **بُري (بَري)**  
  bori  to this time, to here; since

- **نَرٗی**  
  norî  to there

- **سُوْتُهُ**  
  sütî  even
خودی  
yildäm  quickly
البته  
älbätäs  of course
فقط  
faqät (päqät)  only, but
يالغؤز  
yalğaž  only
حالى  
bēli  right now

The following are commonly used Arabic adverbs:

تخيشان  
tégminān  approximately
تامان  
tēmamān  completely
لسان  
āsasān  basically
عمومی  
umumān  in general
مثال  
mäsilān  for example
اختیان  
ittipaqañ  by chance

From Persian:

استا آسته (استا-استا، استیراق)  slowly, quietly
asta (asta-asta, astiraq)

هیشام (هیشام)  always, continually
hemisām (hemisām)
Most East Turki adverbs are formed from nouns, pronouns and numerals by means of the derivative suffixes داغ –داي, like or د –قه, extent, amount, or by means of the dative, locative and ablative case endings.

بوداغ (بوداغ) | bundağı (mundağı) | in this way, thus
شوداغ | sundağı | in that way, thus
أداğı | andağı | in that way, thus
مونجة | munga | this much, to this extent
شوتجه | sanga | that much, to that extent
اتجه | anga | that much, to that extent

In a similar manner the three basic demonstrative pronouns combine with compound endings: -داي plus -قه and -قه (dative case) plus -قه.

مونداچه | mundaqqa | so, thus, to this degree
شونداچه | sundaqqa | so, thus, to that degree
انداچه | andaqqa | so, thus, to that degree
شونرچه | sungenq | to that time, to there
اتنچه | anqiq | to that time, to there
مونچه | mungq | to this time, to here
99. The suffix -ة is attached to the genitive of pronouns and to nouns (such as geographical names) in the nominative to form adverbial expressions:

- مني (meni) in my opinion
- مني (meni) in your opinion
- مني (meni) in his opinion
- مني (meni) in our opinion
- مني (meni) in your opinion
- مني (meni) in their opinion
- مني (meni) in the Russian manner
- مني (meni) in the English manner

Note: مني (meni) in short, in brief

100. The interrogative particles ك (ку) which and ك (ку), what, also make use of the suffixes -ة and -ة in the formation of adverbs.

- ك (ku) (ку) (ку) how, in which manner
- ك (ku) (ку) how much
- ك (ku) (ку) how much
101. VARIABLE ADVERBS

Many adverbs of place derived from nouns utilize dative, locative and ablative case endings to denote direction.

The nouns  dak, yaq, side, and  r, place, in conjunction with the demonstrative pronouns and interrogative particles play an important role in the formation of the most commonly used adverbs of place.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qayaxta</td>
<td>at where?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qayaxtin</td>
<td>(from) where?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qayargà</td>
<td>(to) where?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qayardà</td>
<td>(at) where?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qayardin</td>
<td>(from) where?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buyaxta</td>
<td>(at) here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buyaxtin</td>
<td>(from) here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buyargà</td>
<td>(to) here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buyardà</td>
<td>(at) here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buyardin</td>
<td>(from) here</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Compound adverbs using the other demonstratives occur in three cases similarly:  qayargà, or  qayaxta, to there,  qayardin or  qayaxtin, from there (farther),  buyardà (mawida) right here; and so on.
On occasion stereotyped forms of adverbs that do not conform to the above pattern are encountered. Note compounds using ْyan, also meaning side, and omission of locative case ending.

- qayn  where?
- gyan  there
- uyan  there (farther)
- byan  here
- alga  forward
- anda (anda)  there
- munda  here
- hargis  never
- hoq vaqt  never
- bir vaqta  at one time, once
- ba vaqta  at this time, now
- nomiqa  for what reason, why?
- nem ugun  why?
- birdin  at once, suddenly
- birgi  together, at the same time
- kisiken  somewhat

-137-
Besides case endings to express space relationships between objects, East Turki uses certain post-positions to make these relationships more precise. These post-positions consist of nouns in the dative, locative, or ablative cases and with the 3rd person possessive suffix attached to relate it to the object the location of which is being described. The object immediately precedes the post-position and is either in the nominative or genitive case. The post-positions will be translated into English as prepositions or as prepositional phrases.

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{iği} \textit{interior}
\item \textit{iğidi} \textit{inside (of)}
\item \textit{eğig} \textit{(to) inside}
\item \textit{iğidin} \textit{from inside}
\item \textit{ast} \textit{bottom, lowest part}
\item \textit{astida} \textit{at the bottom of, below}
\item \textit{ağig} \textit{to, from below}
\item \textit{ağidin} \textit{from below}
\item \textit{üst} \textit{top, upper part}
\item \textit{üstida} \textit{on top of, above}
\end{itemize}
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>يان</td>
<td>side</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yan</td>
<td>yanida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>near, beside</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الدأ</td>
<td>front, forepart</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ald</td>
<td>aldida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>in front of, before</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ارفا (اتن)</td>
<td>back, rear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arqa</td>
<td>arqisida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>in the rear of, behind</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يوز</td>
<td>face, surface</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yüz</td>
<td>yūsida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>on top of, above</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>توپأ</td>
<td>top</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tōpā</td>
<td>tōpisida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>on top of, above</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ارنا</td>
<td>space between</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ara</td>
<td>arisida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>between</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اوتترا</td>
<td>middle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ottura</td>
<td>otturisida</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>in the middle of, between</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The above post-positions are used most often in the locative case, but do occur also in the dative and ablative cases to denote direction that the action is taking. They can be in the plural form. Depending on their function in the sentence, these nouns occur in other cases; note last two examples on the next page.
Ex.:  

- دَرَنْ ًةَ اَسْتِهِدَا.  
  Under the tree.

- باَش تَوْبِيْسِه.  
  On the head.

- سَوْ يُزِيْد.  
  On (the surface of) the water.

- اوَي يَانِدا.  
  Near (at) the house.

- مِنْهَ ًةَ اَرْكِحَا.  
  Behind me.

- تَوْعِنْمِن اَسْتِهِدَا.  
  From under the mill.

- تَاسْلِرْنِئَ اَسْتِلْرِيْدَا.  
  From underneath stones.

- تُوْبِنِئَ اَبْيِهِيْ پَاسِكِه.  
  The inside of the house is rather filthy.

- تُوْبِنِئَ اَبْيِهِيْ كَرَانِ.  
  I see the inside of the house.
The following adverbs, used normally as post-positions without case endings, are preceded by a noun in the ablative case. However, these post-positions occur also in declined forms (with dative, locative, and ablative endings) with the preceding noun in the nominative or genitive. In the latter form the sense is more definite.

- içkari  inside
- ilgari  before
- taşqari  outside, besides, except
- yuqari  up, above

Ex.:  

اویندین تاشقاری.  Besides the house.

- اوین (نیک) تاشقاریغا.  (To) outside the house
- تاش (نیک) یوقاریدا.  On the mountain.

- تاکلردن یوقاری.  Above mountains.

-141-
The following post-positions include those most commonly used and govern cases as indicated.

**Nominative:**

اوق단 for, for the sake of, because of

Note: Pronouns used with اوق단, are in the genitive.

- بنيك اوقدان. For this (reason).
- منياك اوقدان. For me (for my sake).
- يبان (بیلا / بیلا / ایلا / ایلا / مینان) with; and
- بیلا (بیلا, بیلا, ایلا, مینان)
- بیلا together with
- بیلا along, according to
- بیلا along, according to

**Ex.:**

- یابونیا اوقدان. For Japan.
- من ایلا بیلا کالمی. I and my father (I with my father) come together.
- ایلا بیلا. Along the canal.

-142-
Dative:

قدّر qâdâr to, as far as
قَارْسِي qarşı against, opposite

Ex.:

أوَّل قَدّر. As far as the house.
أَيْتَكَ قَدّر. Meniň dostumya qarşı. Against my friend.

Ablative:

باشقә basqa besides
سٴوٴت soň after
کٴین keyin after
اولٴ اَنْفَل before
بَرٴ beri since, afterwards

Ex.:

أَرٴجٴ كَونْدٴین اولٴ. Three days before.
تۆلٴ وَقٴتَتٴن سٴوفٴ. After much time.
Besides the usual post-positions there are other expressions used in a similar manner, among which the following are typical:

تويليسيدا (توؤلوؤ)  
	about, concerning

toqlisida (toqluluq)

حقيا  

hāqqida  about, regarding

خوسوسيدا (خوسوسيدا)  

about, relating to

xususai (xususida)

اوستيدين  

about, relating to

üstidin

ارتيلقيق  

through, by means of, with

arqiliq

كوره  

according to

kūre

قيلة (قيلة)  

according to, in view of

qayla (qaylap)

قارة  

(qaraq)  (with dative)

towards, in the direction of

طرب/ ساب / تان / بان  

tārdāp, sar, taman, yan (all meaning side and used with the nominative) towards, in the direction of
Ex.:

- تأليف حقوق تونسية
  تأليف حقوق تونسية. About equal rights.

- يساعد ثقافة تونسية
  يساع ثقافة تونسية. Concerning sericulture.

- سايلاش خوصودا
  سايلاش خوصودا. Relating to war.

- بابر تارخى اوسدغين
  بابر تارخى اوسدغين. About the market-price.

- يزولاوك ارتيليك
  يزولاوك ارتيليك. By means of force.

- غزه كوره ويتارد
  غزه كوره ويتارد. According to the newspapers.

- اسکارلار شهرگا تاراب پاردى
  اسکارلار شهرگا تاراب پاردى. The soldiers went in the direction of the city.

- من شهر تانینا بارام
  من شهر تانینا بارام. I am going in the direction of the city.
107. CONJUNCTIONS

a. Joining words:

हम हम
वा वा
या या
याकी याकी
हम... हम both ... and
या... या either ... or
ना... ना neither ... nor
मू मू and, also (particle following noun)

b. Joining sentences:

लेकिन lekin but, however
लीला leela but, however
हीरा hira but, however
बैल़ी balii but, perhaps
हार्द़िया haridiya perhaps, even
अगर agar if
अगरा agara if, even if
अगरे agare although, even if
नेवादा nevada if, if by chance
जूनकी junki because
की ki that, in order that
PART IX

VERBS

108. The various tenses and moods of East Turki verbs are formed by means of affixes attached to verb stems; these tense and mood signs are followed by personal endings. Auxiliary verbs are used also. There are three sets of personal endings which can be attached to verb stems: the imperative and two types of conjugational endings, the possessive and pronominal suffixes.

Verb stems do not have any formal signs to distinguish them from noun stems: ٰىٰ, qoy, signifies either sheep or put!; ٰىٰ, hungry or open!. Unlike nouns, verb stems express a command (in the second person singular). Another distinguishing characteristic of the verb stem is that it has both an affirmative and a negative form. The negative stem consists of the verb stem plus the particle ٰىٰ, -مث, -مث:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{اٰ} & \quad \text{take!} \\
\text{اٰل} & \quad \text{alma do not take!} \\
\text{ٰر} & \quad \text{ber give!} \\
\text{ٰر} & \quad \text{berma do not give!} \\
\text{تیٰٰ} & \quad \text{qilgan one who did} \\
\text{تیٰٰ} & \quad \text{qilma} & \quad \text{gian one who did not}
\end{align*}
\]

Noun stems, not having a negative form, must be negated by a separate negative verb: ٰىٰ, qoy emas, it is not a sheep.
Verb stems are either simple (primary) or derived (secondary). Secondary stems are derived from nouns (the term including adjectives and numerals) or other verb stems with the aid of special affixes.

109. VERB STEMS DERIVED FROM NOUNS

a. ـلا, ـلا

This is the most common affix for making verbs of nouns. It is used primarily with concrete nouns of native origin and has variants in ـلا, ـلا, and ـلا, ـلا,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>head</td>
<td>باغلا</td>
<td>lead, begin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>work</td>
<td>إساهم</td>
<td>work</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>speak, say</td>
<td>ـلا</td>
<td>سوّل، ـلا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>improve</td>
<td>ـلا</td>
<td>ـلا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>make ready, prepare</td>
<td>تیالا</td>
<td>تیالا</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

b. ـلا, ـلا

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>benefit</td>
<td>فیدا</td>
<td>فیدا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>make use of</td>
<td>فیدا</td>
<td>فیدا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>make precise</td>
<td>ـلا</td>
<td>ـلا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>make oneself ready</td>
<td>تیالا</td>
<td>تیالا</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
c. -läs, -läs (sometimes -däs)

bir one birläs- unite
xawär news xawärläs- be informed
eliktir electricity eliktirläs- electrify
ayaq foot ayaqläs- be finished

D. Other less commonly used verb derivative affixes:

- a; -r, -är, -är; -al, -el; -y, -ay, -ay.

san number sanä- count
orän place orana- be placed, settle
bog empty bogä- empty, vacate
aq white aqar- whiten
qisqä short qisqår shorten
säq healthy säqä- become healthy
saq wide säki- widen
kop much köpä- increase
Most commonly used as auxiliaries are: تَفْلِيق qilmag, do, make, in the active; and بَلَمَاق bolmaq, be, become, in the passive. Also used are: اِتْمَلَك etmek, do, make (active), and تَلِينِمَاق qilinmaq, be made, become (passive).

شِكْل tşıkil
تَفْلِيق تَفْلِيق qilmag organize
تَأْلِيف بَلَمَاق bolmaq be organized
دَوْام dawam
دَوْام تَفْلِيق qilmag continue
قَبْل qabul
قَبْل تَفْلِيق qilmag agree

III. SECONDARY FORMS OF THE VERB

Three affixes are used widely in forming secondary verb stems from both simple verbs and derived verbs. These affixes are: ل -ل (or ن -ن) to form the passive; ش -ش to make reciprocal stems; and the four variants of the causative affix, د -dur, ا -t, و -r, and غ -guz, which change intransitive verbs to transitives and transitive verbs to causatives.
112. PASSIVE VOICE: ل -ُل (ن -ُن)

Passive verbs can be made of all transitives. The transitive verb must have a direct object, but when it is changed to the passive form the subject of the sentence receives the action of the verb.

Most verbs take the affix ل -ُل (the asterisk indicates a variable connecting vowel), which is attached directly to the stem. The resultant secondary stem takes the negative particle immediately after the -ل to make the negative stem.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{بُرُ-} & \quad \text{give} & 
\text{بِرَ-} & \quad \text{beril-} & \quad \text{be given} \\
\text{بُرِ-} & \quad \text{be given} & 
\text{بِرِلَ-} & \quad \text{berilmå-} & \quad \text{not to be given} \\
\text{تُزُ-} & \quad \text{arrange} & 
\text{تُزُول} & \quad \text{tüzül-} & \quad \text{be arranged} \\
\text{تُزُولَا} & \quad \text{tüzılmå-} & \quad \text{not to be arranged} \\
\text{اِوُرُ-} & \quad \text{read} & 
\text{اِوُرُول} & \quad \text{ogul-} & \quad \text{be read} \\
\text{اِوُرُولَا} & \quad \text{ogulma-} & \quad \text{not to be read}
\end{align*}
\]

The variant passive affix ن -ُن is used with verb stems that end in ل -ل, or ل -la.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{اِلَ-} & \quad \text{take} & 
\text{اِلِينَ-} & \quad \text{be taken} \\
\text{قِيِل-} & \quad \text{do} & 
\text{قِيِلينَ-} & \quad \text{be done} \\
\text{اِنْلَأ-} & \quad \text{hear} & 
\text{اِنْلَانَ-} & \quad \text{be heard} \\
\text{يِلَا-} & \quad \text{work} & 
\text{يِلَانَ-} & \quad \text{be worked}
\end{align*}
\]

The passive verb can also be reflexive in meaning, i.e. the action is directed back on the subject of the sentence.
Thus, **اجیدی** گیلدی, can mean either *it was opened*, or *it opened (itself)*.

In relatively few words the -ن affix occurs as a formative of purely reflexive stems. کورل - *be seen* but کورن - *see*; اوون - *read to oneself*; کیون - *dress oneself*.

113. **RECIPROCAL VERB:** $\rightarrow$ 

The reciprocal verb, formed by means of the affix $\rightarrow$, denotes an action that is directed by two or more individuals on one another or is carried out simultaneously.

- کل - *come*
  - کلش - *come at same time*

- اگل - *work*
  - اگلش - *work together*

- کور - *see*
  - کورش - *see one another, see together*

Sometimes the reciprocal affix is used simply as the sign of the plural: the subject has the regular -لا suffix which is omitted from the verb.

- دولار کلش
  - دولار کلشش: They come.

- دولار دوم کلشی
  - دولار دوم کلشش: They continued.

- دولار دوم اولش
  - دولار دوم اولشش: They came.

- دولار دوم کلشیر
  - دولار دوم کلششیر: They continued.
114. CAUSATIVE VERB: قور -dur, س -t, ر -r, ژو -gur.

There are four affixes used to make transitive verbs of intransitives and causative verbs of transitives. The various affixes are equivalent to one another and the choice depends on the nature of the stem.

a. قور -dur (-dūr), س -tur (-tūr)

This occurs with one-syllable and multisyllabic stems ending in a consonant (except -t and -r).

- تيل make  قيلدئر cause to make, have made
- تيل die  قيلدئر kill, cause to die
- تيل turn (intrans.)  قيلدئر turn (trans.)
- تيل come  قيلدئر bring
- تيل know  قيلدئر inform
- تيل be divided  قيلدئر divide
- تيل write  قيلدئر cause or allow to write, have written
This occurs with multisyllabic stems ending in a vowel, or -r.

اوقت  read  اووقت  teach
oqt-  oqt-

اکلا  understand  اکلات  inform
aglat-  aglat-

توختا  stop (intrans.)  توختا  stop (trans.)
toxta-  toxtat-

بايلا  be bound  بايلات  bind
bayla-  baylat-

ايشعه  work  ايشعه  make work, operate
igla-  iglat-

ايبار  send  ايبارت  cause to send
iber-  ibert-

كلتير  bring  كلتير  have bring
koltur-  kolturt-
c. -tv

This occurs with one-syllable stems ending in a consonant, most often -ة but also -ة and rarely -ت.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{أط - open} & \quad \text{إط} - \text{cause to open} \\
\text{قاق - flee} & \quad \text{قاق} - \text{chase} \\
\text{غط - submerge} & \quad \text{غط} - \text{cause to submerge} \\
\text{تَف - fall} & \quad \text{تَف} - \text{let fall, drop}
\end{align*}
\]

d. -ُز (-quz), -ُز (-küz)

This occurs with one-syllable stems ending in -ر or -ت (and sometimes -ل).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{أُت - pass} & \quad \text{أُت} - \text{cause to pass} \\
\text{أبو - finish} & \quad \text{أبو} - \text{finish (trans.)} \\
\text{بر - move} & \quad \text{بر} - \text{move (trans.)} \\
\text{تُر - stand} & \quad \text{تُر} - \text{stop, cause to stand} \\
\text{قِل - do} & \quad \text{قِل} - \text{cause to do}
\end{align*}
\]

115. The transitive verb formed by means of any type of causative affix, like any transitive, must have a direct object.

\[\text{His father does not send (i.e. does not allow to)}\]
\[\text{Sadir to school,}\]

-155-
The causative verb, which denotes that the subject of the sentence causes or allows a second person or agent to do something, must have two objects—a direct and an indirect object. The agent is in the dative case and the direct object is in the accusative case. It is possible to have two causative affixes in one word: қəltүр-, bring (cause to come); қəltүрт- have bring.

Келгəн адам мəлни дукандарга келтүрттə.
The man who came had the shopkeeper bring the goods.

Муну кимге қилдүрдіг (қилмүздиң)?
Whom did you have do this?

Xатни кимге ыздууриң?
Whom did you have write the letter?

Note: Xатни кимге ыздууриң?
To whom did you write the letter?
116. It is possible to have several derivative and functional affixes in one word.

رادیولاس - (intrans.) have radio communication facilities
رادیولاستور - (trans.) provide radio communication facilities
رادیولاستورول - (passive) be provided radio communication facilities

بیل - know
بیلیش - know one another
بیلیشتر - cause to know one another, introduce
بیلدوروش - inform one another
بیلدوروشول - be mutually informed

117. IMPERATIVE

One of the three sets of endings that can be attached to verb stems are the personal endings of the imperative mood. The imperative mood expresses a command or the wish of the speaker that an action be carried out. The endings used for 1st person imperative are actually optative forms and those of the 3rd person are suggestive of the conditional.

The 2nd person plural forms are used as terms of politeness in addressing single persons.
The imperative endings are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Plu.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>אָלַי -ay, -ay</td>
<td>אָלַי -ayliq, (-ayli-, -ayniq)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(אָלַי -ay after vowel)</td>
<td>(אָלַי -ayliq after vowel)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p.</td>
<td>סִיזָלָר (sla)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>אֶלֶק -ig (-uq, -q)</td>
<td>אֶלֶק -igiz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>שֵׁנִין (שֵׁנ) -gın (-gıl)</td>
<td>שֵׁנִין (שֵׁנ) -gınlar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p.</td>
<td>סּוּנ -sun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>סּוּנ -sun</td>
<td>סּוּנ -sunlar</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Following are paradigms of the imperative forms of a consonant stemウォ qil- do, make, andウォ qov- read (vowel stem).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Plu.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>qilay let me do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>כָּלִיא</td>
<td>qilayli(q) let us do</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| 2nd p. | qil}
| כָּל | qilsizlar (qilsala) |
| לִילָה qilīq | qilīnz}
| לִילָה qiljin qiljil | qilīnlar) do! |
| 3rd p. | qil}
<p>| לִילָה qiljin qiljil | qilīnlar) do! |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3rd p.</th>
<th>қилсун let him do</th>
<th>қилсун qilson let them do</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>оқу let me read</td>
<td>оқули(q) let us read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p.</td>
<td>оқу let read</td>
<td>оқуи(q) let read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>оқу(қ) read</td>
<td>оқу(қ) read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>оқу(oq) read</td>
<td>оқу(oq) read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>оқу(oq) read</td>
<td>оқу(oq) read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p.</td>
<td>оқусун let him read</td>
<td>оқусун let them read</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Ex.:**

- Жараб қоғім. Make a reply.
- Сіз растыні айткін. Speak the truth.
- Сіз ба жағына олатын (олтарақ). Sit here.
- Біз алғыры үзілім. Let us move forward!
- Сіз бір ауыр таңғағы өсіріңіз. And you are to.
  - Сіз бір жаққа қозғал. Give a horse to transport the flour.
- Оштігерді өзде бір ер. Let them make the.
- қалай дейін? әса bесистемен. punishment stronger.
- Пайғымдыңымызға қоюм. Do not spill my wheat.
119. Possessive Conjugation

The second set of personal endings used on verbs consists of the possessive suffixes. These are used only with two tenses, the past definite and the conditional, and are attached to the tense signs, ١٢٣٤ -di-, for the past, and لـ -sa-, for the conditional.

Note that the 2nd person plural possessive suffix لـ -miz, is replaced by the ending ء -q (sometimes ء -k).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Conditional</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. sing.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p. sing.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p. sing.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. plu.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p. plu.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-qiz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>لـ -sa-glär</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p. plu.</td>
<td>لـ -sa-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>لـ -ati-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

120. Past Definite

The past definite tense states as a fact that an action was completed or was being completed in the past.

| لـ -qildim | I did, I was doing |
| لـ -qildiq | you did, you were doing |

-End-
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَىَ (قِلمَىَّ)</td>
<td>qilmadi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنَ (قِلمَيْنَّ)</td>
<td>qilmadiq (qilmadug)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadigiq (qilmadiqg)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadigiqiz (qilmadiqgler)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadidi (qilmadilar)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

121. The negative particle لـ **-ме** is put between the stem and tense sign.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadiq (qilmadug)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadiqiz (qilmadiqg)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قِلمَيْنِ (قِلمَيْنِّ)</td>
<td>qilmadidi (qilmadilar)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
It is to be noted that the above forms are pronounced "qimmedim, qimmediy," and so on, and may sometimes be written thus:قبديد. After unvoiced consonants -di becomes -ti: كتت, he went; قاتي, he fled.

122. With the past definite forms the interrogative particle always comes after the personal endings.

Ex.: 
سيزارد يرنه الدجاج؟ Did you buy something? 
Sizlard bir narek aldılgarmu? 
كلما؟ Did he come? 
U keldimu? 
كلما لا؟ Did they not come? 
Ular keldıdima?

123. CONDITIONAL

The second verb form that makes use of the possessive suffixes is the present conditional. The following forms express an action going on in the present, or extending into the future, and are most commonly used in subordinate clauses stating a condition. As to uses of the conditional, see section 237 and following. Other conditional tenses are formed by means of auxiliary verbs. See sections 151-54.
124. PRESENT CONDITIONAL

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verb stem</th>
<th>personal ending</th>
<th>meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qileem</td>
<td>bilsäm</td>
<td>if I do, if I know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qileq</td>
<td>bilséq</td>
<td>if you do, know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilos</td>
<td>bilsä</td>
<td>if he does, knows</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilasq</td>
<td>bilsäx</td>
<td>if we do, know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilsaqiz</td>
<td>bilsäqiz</td>
<td>if you do, know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilsaqlar</td>
<td>bilsäqlär</td>
<td>if they do, know</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

125. PRONOMINAL CONJUGATION

The third set of personal endings found on verb stems are the personal pronouns. In sections 37-39 we dealt with their use as predicates in conjugating nouns. Thus used, they are equivalent to the various parts of "to be".

من اوتوچچن من Mn oqulqul müm. I am a student.
" بيز کولوكس ن " Din küldikımiz. We are strong.
أو اوچينچي دير " أو دیر U qincidar. He is third.
من ايغريق ايپاس من Mn ağırq emäs müm. I am not sick.

The personal pronouns are similarly attached to various verbal forms — participles, gerunds and verbal nouns — to make up different tenses. As will be seen, a number of auxiliary verbs are utilized for compound tenses.
126. CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE PRESENT GERUND

The present gerund consists of the verb stem plus ـًا (after consonants) or ـًا (after vowels).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Consonant stem</th>
<th>Gerund</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تلم</td>
<td>تلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كِلم</td>
<td>كِلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بَلم</td>
<td>بَلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أَلم</td>
<td>أَلمًا</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vowel stem</th>
<th>Gerund</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>إَلمًا</td>
<td>إَلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سَلًا</td>
<td>سَلًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إِلمًا</td>
<td>إِلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بَلمًا</td>
<td>بَلمًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كِلمًا</td>
<td>كِلمًا</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

127. SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE

The following form of the present tense (also called "present-future"), which is much used, conveys an action that is being completed in the present, or can be completed, or will be completed in the future. This is similar to the English usage, as in the expression I am going, which though present in form denotes the future in the sentence: Tomorrow I am going to the city. أَرْتُم مَن شَهْرَكَ بَارَامَن.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>من</th>
<th>qilemsan</th>
<th>oquyman</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>سئ</td>
<td>qilasen</td>
<td>oquysen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>او</td>
<td>qiladur</td>
<td>oquydar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بئ</td>
<td>qilemis</td>
<td>oquymiz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سئ</td>
<td>qilasin</td>
<td>oquysis</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Present tense, negative form:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>من</th>
<th>qilmayman</th>
<th>oqumayman</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>سئ</td>
<td>qilmaysen</td>
<td>oqumaysef</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اور</td>
<td>اوتوماسیز (لاز)</td>
<td>تیلمایدوز</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td></td>
<td>qilmaydor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بیز</td>
<td>اوتوماسیز</td>
<td>تیلمایمیز</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سیز</td>
<td>اوتوماسیز</td>
<td>تیلمایسیز</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sizlar</td>
<td>اوتوماسیز (لاز)</td>
<td>تیلمایسیز</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(سلای)</td>
<td></td>
<td>(qilmaysila)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اولار</td>
<td>اوتوماسیز (لاز)</td>
<td>تیلمایدوز (لاز)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., do not, am not doing, will not do;

I, etc., do not read, am not reading, will not read.

128. INTERROGATIVE FORM OF THE PRESENT TENSE

The interrogative particle, ۰۰ -mu, is inserted between stem of the present gerund and the personal endings (unlike the past tense where it comes at the very end of the word, after the personal endings). Because of the confusing similarity of the interrogative particle to the negative particle (which always joins the verb stem), both the full structure of the present interrogative forms and their pronunciation are given below. Note that the vowel of ۰۰ -mu is not pronounced and that the auxiliary verb ۰۰ -dur, is, is inserted between the particle and the personal endings of the 1st person, singular and plural.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Structure</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>من</td>
<td>تیلا بود ریم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سن</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ار</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بیز</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سیز</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سیزپار</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اولار</td>
<td>تیلا می‌روم (لا)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The interrogative particle can be used with the negative forms of the present: تیلا بود ریم (تیلا بود ریم)؟ qilmaymadurmân (qilmaymadimân), am I not doing? تیلا بود ریم (تیلا بود ریم) ؟ qunaymâyusân (qunaymâyusân) are you not reading? and so on.
129. **COMPOUND TENSES BASED ON THE PRESENT GERUND**

The present gerund in 1 -a, -ä is much used in compounded form with auxiliary verbs, دور -dur, پکان ikän, and -miš. All these give special shades of meaning to the present-future tense. The auxiliaries may be used singly or in combination. The following are the most commonly used compounds.

130. **COMPOUND PRESENT TENSE**

This tense normally is translated into English by the same terms as the simple present. The full paradigm is presented because it is much used. The auxiliary دور -dur, which comes from the verb تر stand, suggests the continuing nature of the action. Thus، تیلا در اسن qiladuräsän, literally has the sense I stand doing, or I am about doing, or simply I am doing，I will do.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Structure</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تیلا در اسن qiladuräsän</td>
<td>qilidämän</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیلا درسن qiladursän</td>
<td>qilidadämän</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیلادور qiladar</td>
<td>qilidu</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., am doing;
I, etc., will do.
### 131. Present Presumptive

This tense will also be rendered in English by the simple or progressive present, or by the future will. The formula of the present presumptive is: verb stem, sign of the present gerund (\(-a, -u\)), دار, -dur, تیلیدو (لا), -ikān, and the personal endings. دار -dur denotes continuing action and the indefinite auxiliary تیلیدو (لا) -ikān suggests the conjectural nature of the action which may be expressed parenthetically by perhaps, it seems, and the like.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Structure</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تیلیدو (لا)</td>
<td>qiliduo (la)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیلیدو (لا)</td>
<td>qiliduo (la)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیلیدو (لا)</td>
<td>qiliduo (la)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تیلیدو (لا)</td>
<td>qiliduo (la)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

-169-
132. **PRESENT TENSE: BASED ON HEARSAY**

The auxiliary verb میش -miš, used in all tenses, implies that the speaker is expressing facts not positively known to him, that he had not himself witnessed the action he is reporting. Usually the hearsay present will be translated into English by the present or future tense; but the sense of the auxiliary میش -miš, might be given by a parenthetical expression such as it is understood, they say, they believe and the like.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>من من</th>
<th>تیلا میشمن qilemišmān</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>سن سن</td>
<td>تیلا میشسن qilemišsān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>او او</td>
<td>تیلا میش qilemiš</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., am, perhaps (it seems), doing; I, etc., may be doing, will do.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>beyz</th>
<th>biz</th>
<th>qilamışız</th>
<th>I, etc., it is believed (they say), am doing, will do</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>siz</td>
<td>siz</td>
<td>qilamışız</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sızlar</td>
<td>sızlar</td>
<td>qilamışızlar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ular</td>
<td>ular</td>
<td>qilamışlar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The hearsay auxiliary میش, -miş, can be combined with the present presumptive form: میش (لار) qilamışlar (لار), they say that I may (will) perhaps be doing, or I, it is believed, am likely to do.

133. **Conjugated Forms of the Past Gerund**

The past gerund consists of the verb stem plus -پ (with a variable connecting vowel on stems ending in a consonant, or -پ after vowel stems).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Past Gerund</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تیلب qil-</td>
<td>qilip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بول bol-</td>
<td>bolap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>کت kēt-</td>
<td>ketip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>اور ur-</td>
<td>urup</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The past gerund is used in the formation of many tenses, the most important of which are: present perfect, past perfect and present momentaneous. Past gerunds also function as verbal adverbs, secondary predicates and as the main element of complex verbs (see Part IX, section 177 ff.).

134. PRESENT PERFECT WITH PRESENT RESULT

The present perfect tense utilizing the past gerund occurs in two forms: gerund plus the pronoun suffixes, and gerund plus دور − دور plus the pronouns (personal endings). There is no practical difference in meaning between the two forms and both are translated into English by the present perfect. In the following paradigms optional forms are in parentheses. This form of the present perfect expresses an action carried out in the past and having a result existing in the present.

| فيلم (دور) | وار (من) | qilip(dur)män | 1, etc., have done |
| فيلم (دور) | وار (س) | qilip(dur)sän | 1, etc., did |
| فيلم دور | qilipdur | | |
| فيلم دور | میز | qilip(dur)miz | |
| فيلم دور | سیز | qilip(dur)siz | |
| فيلم دور | سیز لار | qilip(dur)sizlär | |
| فيلم دور (لاه) | | qilipdur(lar) | |
The compound forms (with ᶦdur) are pronounced:
qiliptimən (or contracted to qiptimən), qiliptišən (qiptišən),
qilipta (qipta), and so so.

135. The negative forms are built on the negative stem:
килмəп (dur)мəн qilməp(dur)mən (pron. qiməptimən), I
have not done; қилипdur qilməpdur (pron. qiməptu), he has
not done; and so on.

136. Past Perfect

| ئېلپ ايدە | qilip edim (qiliptim) |
| ئېلپ ایدەک | qilip edik (qiliptik) |
| ئېلپ ایدى | qilip edi (qilipti) |
| ئېلپ ایدۇق | qilip eduq (qiliptuq) |
| ئېلپ ایدەکیز | qilip ediqiz (qiliptiqiz) |
| ئېلپ ایدەسەیلەر | qilip eðiçilər (qiliptila) |
| ئېلپ ایدە (لەر) | qilip ed (lər) (qilipti) |

I, etc., had done; I, etc., did

Two alternate forms occur in pronunciation: the contractions,
qiptim, qiptig, qipti, etc.; and qilividim, qilividig, qilividı,
qilividuq, qilividiqiz, qilividila, and qilividila.
Present Momentaneous

Much used is a present tense composed of the past gerund and the simple present of the verb ُلَيْ، *yat-* *lie*, used as an auxiliary. It gives an event happening in present time at a given moment.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تيليبي ياتاذور</th>
<th>qilipyatamân (qilivatimân)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتاض</td>
<td>qilipyatastân (qilivatisân)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتادور</td>
<td>qilipyatadur (qilivatidu)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتاميز</td>
<td>qilipyatamiz (qilivatimiz)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتاسيز</td>
<td>qilipyatasiz (qilivatisiz)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتاسيلار</td>
<td>qilipyatasilâr (qilivatila)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيليبي ياتازادور (لا)</td>
<td>qilipyatadur(lar) qilivatidu(la)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., am doing (right now)

Ex.:

داهال كيپش تيليبي ياتاذور؟
*Doing ninis qilivatidu?*

What is your father doing (right now)?

من كاپيني اوپيپ تيليبي ياتامين.
*Wên kitapni equpiyetamên (equvatimên).*

I am reading the book (right now).
138. OTHER CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE PAST GERUND

Present perfect, based on hearsay:

قیلمبودودمین qilipdurimişmän (qiliptimismän, qiptimismän), *I, they say, have done, or It is reported that I have done.*

Present perfect presumptive:

قیلمبودودکانمین qilipdurikânmai (qiliptikânmän, qiptikânmän), *I have perhaps done, or I may have done.*

Present perfect presumptive, based on hearsay:

قیلمبودودکانمین qilipdurikânmismän, (qiliptikânmişimän, qiptikânmişimän), *They say that I perhaps have done, or It is believed that I may well have done.*

Future perfect:

قیلمبوبولارمین qilip bolarmän, *I shall have done.*

139. CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE INDEFINITE FUTURE PARTICIPLE

The indefinite future participle consists of the verb stem plus -or. It has a special negative formation: verb stem plus باس -mas, -mäs.

قیلم qil- qilar will be doing;

one who does
The indefinite future participle expresses an action that continues into the future. It can also denote customary action in the present. The future participle, being a verbal adjective, can modify nouns. As a modifier it states the inherent function of a definite object: 

حَذَّرُ الْفَزْنِ ْعَزَّ الْفَزْنِ, flying wings, or wings that fly. However, it is little used as a modifier.

Of much greater importance is its role in the formation of two widely used tenses: the indefinite future and the imperfect (habitual).
### 140. INDEFINITE FUTURE TENSE

| من (mān) | تیلارمیز (qilarmān) | I, etc., will do; |
| سن (ṣān) | تیلارسان (qilarsān) |
| او (u) | تیلار (qilar) |
| بیز (biz) | تیلارمیز (qilarmīz) |
| سیز (sīz) | تیلارسیز (qilarsīz) |
| اولار (olar) | تیلار (lar) |

### 141. FUTURE INDEFINITE, NEGATIVE FORM

| من (mān) | تیلماسمن (qilmāsman) |
| سن (ṣān) | تیلماسسن (qilmāssān) |
| او (u) | تیلماس (qilmās) |
| بیز (biz) | تیلماسیز (qilmāsīz) |

I, etc., will not do;
I, etc., do not (customarily)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تیما-سیز</th>
<th>qilmasiz</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>سیلار</td>
<td>qilmasilər</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیاماس (لا) علار</td>
<td>qilməsi(lar)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ex.:

ارته پاسدا داهتلاز بوگدا بایلاوع

The peasants plant wheat in the spring.

* بو درخته خالی

be acestna keçirlər.

They will cut down this tree.

کوزده پوندات ایکامسیز

kızat buğday ekənmişiz.

We do not (will not) sow wheat in the autumn.

* شهر پلامی

Şəhəri hərəmsən.

You are not going to the city.

* بو اینسی بوکؤزوما؟

Bu işini poxovamem?

Will he not finish the task?
Note: Widely used in the language is a verbal noun formed of the negative stem of the future indefinite plus the collective suffix -liq, -lik to express a negative abstraction: bilməslilik, ignorance; bergəslilik, non-giving; uyusturalmasılık, state of being unorganized; hüzum qilmaslıq, non-aggression.

142. IMPERFECT (HABITUAL) TENSE

The imperfect tense consists of the indefinite future participle plus the auxiliary verb ədi- plus personal endings. It expresses an action continuing in the past, or repeated many times as a habit.

The imperfect tense also is important in its use in the main clause of a conditional sentence to express the subjunctive mood. See section 234.

| حائر ədi | qilar edim (qilattim) | I, etc., was doing |
| حائر ədi | qilar ediq (qilattiq) | I, etc., used to do |
| حائر ədi | qilar edı (qilatti) | |
| حائر ədi | qilar eduv (qilattuq) | I, etc., would have done |
| حائر ədi | qilar edığiz (qilattığız) | |
| حائر ədi | qilar edınlar (qilattığla) | |
| حائر ədi (əlar) | qilar edı(lar) (qilattila) | |
Ex.:

Tugtinda toz bulutdu aşıqı yurttı.
Dust like a cloud was floating (went flying) (all the time) in the mill.

Här kün mën mäktäpkä barar edim.
I used to go to school every day.

Yoldığım kâhmäsä edii, dedem ölar edii.
If my comrade had not come, my father would have died.

143. OTHER CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE INDEFINITE FUTURE PARTICIPLE

Indefinite future presumptive:
qilarikämän (qilökämän), I, it seems, will do; I ought to do.

Indefinite future, based on hearsay:
qilärmişän (qilamişän), It is understood that I will do; I, they say, will be doing.

Indefinite future presumptive, based on hearsay:
qilarikämäişän (qila(i)kämäişän), They suppose that I probably will do.
144. **Note:** The indefinite future participle is combined with an expression میکی miki, or more usually میکی miki (a contraction of the interrogative particle میکان mikhān) which might be translated whether there be or I wonder if.

Ex.:

بو کی سرورمیکی؟
Bir gep sorarmiši?
I wonder if he'll ask anything (i.e. one word)?

استاّینه اویگه کردپ باتای بر کئی بار میکی دیب اویگه کیردی.
Asta'ina íygā kirip baqay, bir kisi bar miki dep, íygā kirdi.
Saying "I will enter the house quietly and see whether there might be somebody there," she entered the house.

بئینیکی بوماسیکی
bairamiki tarmamiki:
whether he gives or not.

145. **Conjugated Forms of the Past Participle**

The past participle consists of the verb stem plus -گان -gan (or one of the phonetic variants -گئان -gān, -گئان -gān, -کئان -kān).

قیلган qil- qīlgan done; one who did
Like the past gerund in "-p, the past participle is widely used to form various tenses expressing actions occurring in the past. The tense forms utilizing the past participle suggest indefiniteness as compared with the corresponding past gerundial forms; this difference is of little significance and will not be reflected in translation.

Unlike the past gerund, however, (which is essentially a verbal adverb), the past participle (being a verbal adjective) can be used as a noun modifier and as such occurs as a substantive in any one of the cases in the typical East Turkic expanded sentence (participial construction); see Part XI, section 203 following.

146. DEFINITE PRESENT PERFECT

| تيلبانهن | qilğanman |
| تيلغانسن | qilğansen |
| تيلبان | qilğan |
147. OTHER PRESENT PERFECT FORMS

Indefinite present perfect:
ثييئانٌ (ثييئانٌ), I, perhaps, have done, I have done (but the result of the action is not clear).

Indefinite present perfect presumptive:
ثييئانٌ (ثييئانٌ), I, it seems, have actually done, I have done.

Definite present perfect, based on hearsay:
ثييئانٌ (ثييئانٌ), They say that I have done.

Present perfect presumptive, based on rumor:
ثييئانٌ (ثييئانٌ), It is reported that I probably have done.

Indefinite present perfect, based on hearsay:
ثييئانٌ (ثييئانٌ), It is supposed that I have done (but actually this is not so).
148. PAST PERFECT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تيلغان ايد</th>
<th>qilgan edim</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايد١</td>
<td>qilgan ed1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايد٢</td>
<td>qilgan eduq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايد٣</td>
<td>qilgan ediniz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايد٤</td>
<td>qilgan edilər</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايد٥ (لا)</td>
<td>qilgan edi(1ar)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., had done;
I, etc., did

149. CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE NEGATIVE PAST PARTICIPLE

Most often all compounds of the past participle are made
negative in the regular manner by inserting the negative
particle between the verb stem and the participial ending:

کيلماكان, not having come, the one who did not come.

However, another negative formation is possible. The
participle is treated as a noun and the negative auxiliary verb,
emən, written separately, is put between the past
participle and the personal ending: کيلماك emən, I have not come.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تيلغان ايياسين</th>
<th>qilməjanən</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايياسين</td>
<td>qilgan emənən</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايياسين</td>
<td>qilməjanən</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلغان ايياسين</td>
<td>qilgan emənən</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past participle</td>
<td>Collective form</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilmağan</td>
<td>qilğa emäs (dur)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilmağanız (bиз)</td>
<td>qilğa emäsniz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilmağanız</td>
<td>qilğa emässiz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilmağan (lar)</td>
<td>qilğa emäs (durlar)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: The past participle plus the collective suffix forms a derived noun that denotes a completed action:

- qilğañliq  affair, act
- tüzülğañlik  that which has been completely organized

150. PRESENT PERFECT (POSSESSIVE CONJUGATION)

Yet another tense which is translated into English by means of the present perfect is that formed of the past participle plus possessive suffixes plus the auxiliaries bar (affirmative) or yoq (negative). This tense denotes that it is to be taken as a fact that the given action was completed in the indefinite past.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Possessive</th>
<th>Present perfect form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qilğıanyaım</td>
<td>qilğañim bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilğani</td>
<td>qilğañi bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیانی بار</td>
<td>qilγani bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیانیم بار</td>
<td>qilγanim bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیانینی بار</td>
<td>qilγaniniz bar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیانی بار</td>
<td>qilγani bar</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Present perfect negative:

| قیلیانیم بوق | qilγanim yoq | I have not done |
| قیلیانی بوق | qilγani yoq | he has not done |

Past perfect:

| قیلیانیم بار ایدی | qilγanim bar edi | I had done |
| قیلیانی بار ایدی | qilγani bar edi | he had done |
| قیلیانیم بوق ایدی | qilγanim yoq edi | I had not done |
| قیلیانی بوق ایدی | qilγani yoq edi | he had not done |

151. COMPOUND CONDITIONAL FORMS OF THE VERB

The simple present of the conditional is formed of the verb stem plus conditional sign -sa, -sa (if) plus the possessive conditional endings: قیلیانی qil-sa-m, if I do; see sections 123-124. Other tenses utilize auxiliary verbs which are compounded both with the present conditional and with the past participle.
The above forms are used in the subordinate clause of a conditional sentence usually in expressing the subjunctive mood. If it is in the indicative mood, the subordinate clause may have the conjunction when. The imperfect (habitual past) forms of the conditional express the same idea:

قیسَم یَولَر ایدی qilsa bolar edi (pron. qisan bolatti), if I did (as a custom), I would ..., قیسَم یَولَر ایدی (qisam bolatti), if you did (customarily), you would ..., قیسَم یَولَر ایدی qilsa bolar edi (qisam bolatti), if it turns out that I do; if I should do.

Present conditional presumptive:

قیسَم ایکان qilsam ikan, if I, let's suppose, do; if I should do.

قیسَم یَولَر ایدی qilsa boladarkan, if it turns out that I do; if I should do.
### Conditional Form of the Present Perfect

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Uzbek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsam</td>
<td>if I, etc., did (completely);</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsaq</td>
<td>if I, etc., have done (already)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa</td>
<td>when I, etc., have done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsaq</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsaqiz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa(lar)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The above forms are equivalent to the past conditional forms: Қилса эди, Қилса эдим, Қилса эди, etc.

### Conditional Subjunctive Form of the Past Perfect

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Uzbek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa (bolsam) edim</td>
<td>if I, etc., had done (already)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa (bolsaq) edig</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa edii</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa (bolsaq) ediq</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa (bolsaqiz) edigiz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilgon bolsa edii</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Conjugated Forms of the Present Participle

The present participle consists of the present gerund plus *dur* plus *-yan*. The present participle suffix *-dur-yan* is pronounced "diyan".

- *qiladur-yan* doing; one who does
- *oqyadur-yan* reading; one who reads
- *qilmaydur-yan* not doing; one who does not
- *oqumaydur-yan* not reading; one who reads not

The various tenses based on the present participle suggest an action about to begin; they might be termed "paolo post" tenses.

Present Immediate Future (Present Inchoative)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>qiladur-yan (dur) a:n</th>
<th>I, etc., am about to do;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qiladur-yan (dur) e:n</td>
<td>I, etc., will apparently do.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladur-yan (dur) miz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladur-yan (dur) siz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladur-yan (dur) lar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Present-immediate future presumptive:

ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم),
I perhaps am ready to do; I will perhaps do.

157. OTHER INCHOATIVE TENSES

Past inchoative:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم</th>
<th>qiladurğan boldim (qiladurğan edim)</th>
<th>I, etc., was about to do;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (اپیدەی)</td>
<td>qiladurğan boldiq (ediq)</td>
<td>I, etc., decided (was determined) to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (اپیدەی)</td>
<td>qiladurğan boldi (edi)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (اپیدوق)</td>
<td>qiladurğan bolduq (eduq)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (اپیدەیە)</td>
<td>qiladurğan boldiniz (ediñiz)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (لاو) (اپیدەیەر)</td>
<td>qiladurğan boldi(lar) (edilär)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Conditional form of present inchoative:

ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم),
if I happen to do; if I begin doing; when I begin to do.

Subjunctive form, inchoative action:

ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم (ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم edim (ئێلانەرەگەن یۆڵەم edim), if I had decided to do (I would ...).
### Necessitative Verbs (Present Participle)

#### Present necessitative:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>qiladurğanim bar</th>
<th>I, etc., must do;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qiladurğanîq bar</td>
<td>I, etc., have to do.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladurğani bar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladurğanîmiz bar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladurğanîqiz bar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiladurğanî bar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Negative present necessitative:

I must not do; I do not have to do; it is not necessary for me to do.

#### Past necessitative:

qiladurğanim bar edî, I had to do.  
qiladurğanîm yoq edî, I did not have to do.

#### Conditional necessitative:

qiladurğanîm bar bolesa (qilidiğînim ba bosa), if I must do; if I have to do.

#### Subjunctive necessitative:

qiladurğanîm bar bolesa edî(qilidiğînim ba bosa edî), if I had to do, (I would...).
159. **CONJUGATED FORMS OF VERBAL NOUNS**

Two verbal nouns are conjugated to form a number of widely used tenses. These are the infinitive form of the verb in ح -maq, ـmak, and the verbal noun ("noun of action") in ـمت, -gül. Another verbal noun in ـت is encountered sometimes in conjugated form and is used as an infinitive. As regards the employment of the verbal nouns in ح -maq and ـت as infinitives, see sections 170-71.

160. **TENSES BASED ON THE INFINITIVE**

The verbal noun in ح -maq is equivalent to the English infinitive as it functions as a verbal noun in various cases:
He began to read; I saw him fall. The English infinitives in these examples can be changed to verbal nouns with no practical change in meaning: He began reading; I saw him falling.

It is in the latter sense that the East Turkic infinitive, like other noun forms, is conjugated. The pronominal conjugational suffixes always carry the sense of "to be".

The infinitive consists of the verb stem plus ح -maq (with back vowels) or ح -mäk (with front vowels).

- نماق qillumq to do, doing
- ودامان oqumacq to read, reading
- دماك (كله) külmäk to come, coming
- زماك türçäk to organize, organizing
Conjugated infinitives occur in three forms: in the locative case to denote action in process; with the agent suffix in -qi to express the intention of the actor to do something; and with the possessive suffixes plus \( \text{bar} \) (or \( \text{yoq} \)) to convey the idea of necessity in carrying out an action.

161. PROGRESSIVE TENSES

Present progressive:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Типматтаган</th>
<th>qilmaga(\text{tan})a</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Тилматтаган</td>
<td>qilmaga(\text{tan})an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилматтага (дог)</td>
<td>qilmaga(\text{dur})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилматтагаи</td>
<td>qilmaga(\text{tani})z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилматтагаси</td>
<td>qilmaga(\text{tas})iz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилматтагаси (дурлар)</td>
<td>qilmaga(\text{durlar})</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., am (in the process of) doing.

Past progressive:

Тилматтага адиим qilmaga\(\text{dum}\) (qimmaqtidim), I was (in the process of) doing.

Conditional progressive (present tense):

Тилматтага болосим qilmaga\(\text{bosum}\) (qimmaqtabosum), if I actually am doing; if I am (in the process of) doing; when I am doing.
Subjunctive progressive (past tense):

\[ \text{ئؤلا داعم} \ gilməqta bolsa edim (qimmaqta bosa edim), \]

*if I were (then in the process of) doing, (I would ...) .

162. VERBS OF INTENTION

Present tense of intention:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>لکملاسیلا</th>
<th>gilməqqimən</th>
<th>I, etc., intend doing</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>لکملاسیلا</td>
<td>gilməqqimən</td>
<td>I, etc., am ready to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(دایر)</td>
<td>gilməqqi(dur)</td>
<td>I, etc., am doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لکملاسیلا</td>
<td>gilməqqiməz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لکملاسیلا</td>
<td>gilməqqieiz</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(دایر)</td>
<td>gilməqqi(dur)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Past tense of intention:

\[ \text{ئؤلا داعم} \ gilməqqi edim (qimmaqqidim), I intended doing, I had the intention to do. \]

Conditional present tense of intention:

\[ \text{ئؤلا داعم} \ gilməqqi bolsam (qimmaqqi bosaam), \]

*if I intend doing; when I intend doing.

Subjunctive form of intention (past tense):

\[ \text{ئؤلا داعم} \ gilməqqi bolsa(m)edim (qimmaqqi bosa(m) edim), \]

*if I intended doing, I would ... *. 
163. NECESSITATIVE VERBS (INFINITIVE)

Present necessitative:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Укромам бар</th>
<th>қилмағим бар</th>
<th>I, etc., must do</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Тилбаттам бар</td>
<td>қилмағлғ бар</td>
<td>I, etc., have to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилбаттам бар</td>
<td>қилмағи бар</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилбаттам бар</td>
<td>қилмағимиз бар</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилбаттам бар</td>
<td>қилмағиги бар</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Тилбаттам бар</td>
<td>қилмағи бар</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Past necessitative:

қилмағим бар, I had to do.

Negative necessitative:

қилмағим йоғ, I do not have to do.

қилмағим йоғ edi, I did not have to do.

164. CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE VERBAL NOUN IN қилмағим

A very widely occurring noun of action is formed of the verb stem plus қилмағим (with a variable vowel).

қилиш         qilish       doing, function
ислам         islam        working, works
тўғлос         tog'lost   completing, completion

-195-
This verbal noun is conjugated only by the possessive suffixes plus یار (ئی یار). It occurs in the same tenses as the similar forms of the infinitive in یلا -ماق and with the same meaning. یلا قیلماقیم یار and یلا قیلیشیم یار qilişim یار both state literally: *I have the doing* and thus signify, *I have to do, I must do.*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>قیلیشیم یار</th>
<th>قیلیشیم یار</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
<td>قیلیشیم یار</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc.,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I, etc.,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc.,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

165. CONJUGATED FORMS OF THE VERBAL NOUN IN یئ -ئی

Such more commonly encountered in conjugated form than the verbal nouns یئ -ئی are those ending in یئ -یئ (with variants یئ -یئ, یئ -یئ, یئ -یئ).

This noun of action consists of the verb stem plus the ending یئ -یئ.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>یئ</th>
<th>یئ</th>
<th>یئ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>قیلیشی</td>
<td>قیلیشی</td>
<td>قیلیشی</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

going, leaving coming
The verbal noun in ֙ -יִגְבּ was originally a future participle. Unlike the וְ -בָּ forms, the nouns in ֙ -יִגְבּ rarely occur in isolated form (i.e. as pure nouns) but are conjugated in three ways: with the possessive suffixes plus ֣ בַּ (יִגְבּ -yiqq) to express wish or intention; with the collective suffix לְ-וע (yiqq plus possessive suffixes plus בַּ) to denote the urgent or compulsory nature of the action; and with the likeness affix וְ -d to plus the predicate pronouns to suggest possibility of, or nearness to, completion of an action.

166. FORMS EXPRESSING WISH

Present tense:

כִּילֶגֶמֶם בָּ qil'gem bar I wish to do,
I ought to do.

כִּילֶגֶמֶם יִגְבּ qil'gem yiqq I do not wish (ought not) to do.

Note: On occasion the auxiliary verbs are replaced in the third person by דָּ -d, and the negative is expressed by means of the particle לְ-d as in the second example.

Canubi ameriqadaki ormon keelp qilipqa qalishiljusidur.

Efforts shall be made to explore the South American jungle.
As final decisions have not been made, he does not wish to make any explanation at all concerning this.

Past:

دَنَّى قَيْلُوم بَار اِنَّ مَعِيِّنَتَيْنَ, َI wished to do.

قَيْلُوم يَوُق اِنَّ مَعِيِّنَتَيْنَ, َI did not wish to do.

Conditional and subjunctive:

لَا يَلَيْم قَيْلُوم بَار, َif I wish to do.

لَا يَلَيْم قَيْلُوم بَار اِنَّ مَعِيِّنَتَيْنَ, َ(I would . . .)

167. FORMS EXPRESSING NECESSITY

The verbal noun made up of verb stem plus -ғулуқ denotes an action urgent and necessary; e.g. ғулуқ, an urgent (or worthwhile) business; ғулуқ, he who has to go away.

Present tense:

ғулуқ, َI must do, I have to do.

Past:

ғулуқ, َI had to do.
Conditional:

قیلموتلیم بار بولسا  قِلْجَّالَقِمَمَ بَرَ بُولْسا, if I have to do.

168. FORMS EXPRESSING PROBABILITY

Present tense:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>قیلموُدلُکَمُنُ</th>
<th>قِلْجَادْلَکُمَنُ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>قیلموُدلُکَسَنُ</td>
<td>قِلْجَادْلَکِسَنُ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلموُدلُکُ</td>
<td>قِلْجَادْلُکُ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلموُدلُکِزُ</td>
<td>قِلْجَادْلَکِزُ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلموُدلُکِئُزُ</td>
<td>قِلْجَادْلَکِئُزُ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قیلموُدلُکُ</td>
<td>قِلْجَادْلُکُ</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I, etc., am almost doing; there are indications that
I, etc., will do; it looks like
I, etc., am doing.

Present indefinite:

قیلموُدلُکُدورمنُ (قِلْجَادْلَکُدورَمَنُ), it looks as if I, perhaps, will do; probably I shall, all the same, do.

Past:

من قیلموُدلُکُایدُمُ | من قِلْجَادْلُکُ ایدُمُ |

I nearly did, it looks as if I have done.

Conditional:

من قیلموُدلُکُبولوُمُ | من قِلْجَادْلُکُ بُولْوَمُ |

if there are signs that I do, if I almost do.
Ex.:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{finite \ arele \ koğrak \ wo?} \\
\text{Yana hava käljudak mu?} \\
\text{Has the wagon really come again? (Does it look like the wagon has come again?)}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\text{dohnmen menin tugumnumni vtyren qiljudak.} \\
\text{The enemy all but destroyed my mill.}
\]

\[
\text{bu adam menin qyago keljudak edi.} \\
\text{This man had just come to your house.}
\]

Note: A noun of agent, derived from the verbal noun in \( \text{q}-\text{y}\) by means of the suffix \( \text{qi} \), denotes a constant function of a thing, or a profession of a person.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{qiljتك} & \quad \text{doer, maker; businessman} \\
\text{gqiygy} & \quad \text{reader, pupil} \\
\text{gqiygy} & \quad \text{writer}
\end{align*}
\]

169. OTHER FORMS OF THE FUTURE TENSE

Besides the indefinite future in \( əl - \text{ar} \) (negative in \( əl - \text{man} \)), two other future forms are occasionally encountered with the following suffixes attached to the verb stem: (1) the Old Turkish future suffix \( \text{q}-\text{gay} \) (and variants \( \text{q}-\text{gay}, \text{q}-\text{gay}, \text{q}-\text{gay} \)), and (2) the modern Turkish (Osmanlı) sign of the future tense \( \text{el}-\text{z}-\text{açıq} \) (or \( \text{el}-\text{z}-\text{açıq} \)).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Turkish</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qilğayım</td>
<td>تيلاجاك</td>
<td>I, etc., will do,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilğayım</td>
<td>تيلاجاك</td>
<td>I, etc., wish to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلاي</td>
<td>ديلىاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilağyk</td>
<td>تيلاجاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلاي</td>
<td>ديلىاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilağyk</td>
<td>تيلاجاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلاي</td>
<td>ديلىاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilağyk</td>
<td>تيلاجاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلاي</td>
<td>ديلىاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilağyk</td>
<td>تيلاجاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تيلاي</td>
<td>ديلىاک</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ex:

سز اونیق موم سینی تجان پېکه پېکه؟
*Siz uniq mevasini qoan yeqliyisiz?*
*When will you (do you wish to) eat his meat?*

بیر روس-آمریکن سوئنتی بولیس-اولايیه خاتما آزاده تالفه؟
*Bur rus-amerykan roqusi bolmasa, almaniya qandao anada gelijy? If there is no Russian-American war, how will Germany remain free?*

سینفیی ياخلامینی کولکنیلامیندن هایدایاگامز.
*We will drive the class enemy out of our collective farm.*

یکک قیندیکی حوا اوتوتالری اولکه پژیکی تروک باشلاریدنی اوتوتالی تکول تلافیچ.
*Igki qindiki hava qullari ulkmizdiki turs yaellaridanmu oguqsi qabul qilaçaq. The air schools of the interior of China will admit students also from the Turkish youth of our province.*
170. THE INFINITIVE

The infinitive in East Turki, made up of verb stem plus ۶لا, -ما، -ماک, is a verbal noun that expresses the concept of an action or a situation without reference to tense, mood, number or person. It shares the properties of the noun in that it takes both case endings and the possessive suffixes.

Dictionaries list verbs in the infinitive form.

Above we considered the role played by the infinitive, as a verbal noun, in the formation of certain tenses. Another important function is that of complement to the finite verb. Similarly used as infinitives are two other forms: the verbal noun in ۶ فیلس (فیلیس) and the non-temporal gerund in ۶ لیل (لیلی).

171. VERBAL NOUN IN ۶ -هیUSED AS INFINITIVE:

The verbal noun consisting of verb stem plus ۶ -هی is used as an infinitive under the following circumstances:

a. with the words ۶ کرک, ۶ لازیم and ۶ زیرم, all meaning it is necessary.

Ex.: ۶ نکل کرک ۶ لازیم.
Tegişlik şaza beriş lazim.
It is necessary to give suitable punishment.
It is necessary to remove from the ranks of the komsomol such a spoiled son of a mullah.

Mama bu arqida qelisliglirni gapamliq bilin tugallug kerak.

See here! It is necessary to liquidate with speed these arrears (lit., these matters that are left behind).

Hokumet xizmetkarlarining oqsaq taminatlarni qo'ying qismi va sonniq tasidagi go'zumda pullarni alip tugallug lagin.

Government workers must give up the surplus portion of such supplies and the supplementary monies in excess of this amount.

b. with the post-position лован, in the sense of "in order to": поин ылын ыргон, Munilies Угун. In order to take this. Сатил ило ыргон, Setiш Угун. In order to sell.

Byalar тиракки, биринчи ыргон, Kuchda jeero.

Kollar tezahiri teyiq угун куруда yurudo.

The children are walking along the street gathering fuel.
c. with words governing the dative case.

Ex.:  
مر تاریخ اولارا چوی توری کلی.
They began to flee in all directions.

وزعئه اولارا باردم پیشکه توری کلی.
We had to give them help.

بایندونا قلیسی مکنپرمن.
We are obliged to remain here.

172. THE INFINITIVE IN -маq

The verbal noun қий -маq is most nearly like the English infinitive. It occurs in all cases.

Ex.:  
غازان қийиз асаб қиёса атна сын блюдак қиёма.
If one hangs a kettle over the fire, it is necessary to put water into it.

بنداق یولاق؟ سیئی؟
For what reason (why) is it (the situation) like this?
Kitab oqumaqni yaxshi körider.
He likes to read books.

Barmaga ilaçim yoq.
I have not the means for going (in order to go).

Bu kim bujday uzaq qilgan bu yerga kelip edi.
This man came here (in order) to sell wheat.

Note: The infinitive in the accusative, following verbs of saying, thinking, and the like, can express indirect discourse.

Bunug qoldin u atni tartip, alip kelip, padisaniq oldiqa qoymaqni xial qildi.
He thought that he would take that horse from his hands, bring it back, and place it before the king.

Occasionally the infinitive functions as the predicate of a subordinate clause and is translated as soon as.

Garibning yuzi yinakna tutmaq hana yuzi yinakka qara korundid.
As soon as he held the mirror to the beggar’s face, his face at once appeared black in it.
As soon as the letters reached the kings, each king immediately sent his own daughter to Shah Bahram.

173. THE NON-TEMPORAL GERUND IN -ГИЛІ

The non-temporal gerund made up of the verb stem plus the ending -ГИЛІ (with variants) or -ГІНІ (with its variants) is used as a complement of the finite verb. Expressing goal or purpose, it is translated into English usually by the phrase "in order to" or by the infinitive. Sometimes it signifies "since".

Ex.:

Биз парақа төрғилі келдік.
We came to harvest the cotton.

Бу ярқа нама килтілі келділірк?
Why (to do what) did you come here?

Менин териілі ұруғым ық.
I have no seed to plant.

Амалдар маалымнан сатып куперу беріді.
An official gives the order for selling the goods.
Having taken the due amount of money ("the money which is to be taken"), the buy gives the order to stamp (the goods).

It is five years since I came (or, "I came five years ago").

I have been serving you for many years.

174. OTHER NON-TEMPORAL GERUNDS

Two other gerundial forms serve to complement the finite verb: ِئْجِقَ -ُجاق and ِئْجِقَ -ُجاق.

175. THE NON-TEMPORAL GERUND IN ِئْجِقَ -ُجاق

The gerund consisting of verb stem plus ِئْجِقَ -ُجاق (-ُجاق, -ُجاق, -ُجاق) denotes that the point of completion of the action expressed by the gerund coincides with, or immediately precedes, the action action given by the finite verb. It is translated by "just as," "as soon as," "after," "having," "because," and like expressions. It often expresses cause.
Ex.:  
Sadir külgüç anisi çay attı.
Just as (after) Sadir came, his mother was making (made) tea.

Baazarğa harekta maýa bir cin qop alğaç kıl.
If (when) you go to the bazar, bring (shaving taken, come) me one jing of meat.

Yoldişim maýa çeşep bärmiğči mən başqıça oylaşqa maşhur.
Because my comrade has not answered me, I have to think otherwise.

Note: The gerund bolğaç is used in the sense of as being and is equivalent to Osmanlı olarak which also is encountered in Sinkiang newspapers.

Ex.  
Xatunığa həmra bolğaç şu yerdi turup barsla.
Go and live there as companion to my wife.

176. THE NON-TEMPORAL GERUND in -GUNÇA

The gerund consisting of verb stem plus -GUNÇA (-günçə, -günca, -günçə) or the contracted form -GİÇA (and variants) serves to express the circumstance that the action designated by the gerund is a prerequisite or pre-condition of the action stated by the finite word. The gerundial
ending literally means up to, and is usually translated while or until (mostly in the negative).

Ex.: من كريب بارتمجه بولدامق بلان اورتاجستم.
Män ketip bar provinces yolüşim billün ugrastım.
While going, I met my comrade.

كليب يانتوجه بر نوكلى توتوب الديم.
Kelivatquog bir tülkin tutup aldım.
While coming, I caught a fox.

بول بريسچچه تان يروان.
Pul bärmiqoch nan bärmas.
They do not give any bread until one gives the money.

أو آدام مسحتمين كالونچه خوتاني دم ماهر توبا نه شتليکه.
U adım mäscittin kelgünqä xotuni hän aşär qopap nástalikka qay dömlüp täyyür qilip turbädür.
By the time that nan comes from the mosque his wife also will have gotten up, made tea for breakfast and gotten (everything) ready.
177. SYNTACTIC USE OF GERUNDS

Besides being used in the formation of various tenses, gerunds in East Turki have a great significance from the point of view of syntactic use. They are found in an expanded type of sentence in which the gerund may be equivalent to a subordinate clause in an English sentence.

The term, "gerund," as applied to East Turki grammar signifies a verbal adverb; thus the gerund basically modifies a verb. It describes the manner or circumstances of the action stated by the main verb.

178. PRESENT GERUND

The present gerund (verb stem plus ی -ة, -ة), aside from its role in the formation of tenses, has a rather limited application. Most important is its use in the negative form where it expresses an action taking place simultaneously with that stated by the main (finite) verb; it replaces the negative of the past gerund (see sec. 184). The present gerund otherwise is encountered under the following circumstances:

-211-
179. REDUPLICATED PRESENT GERUND

a. In reduplicated form it expresses a long-continuing action: بارا بارا bara-bara, going farther and farther away, or gradually; كورا كورا körä körä, keeping in the field of vision; ايلاي ايلاي islay islay, working steadily.

Ex.: دوداغ یتیک ایش تیلا قیلا موز توتود یانین اوز بیوتوب بیلداي Sundağı yittik is qila qila muz tutuğa yaqin oy putup boldi.
They worked so fast that the house was ready before freezing (time).

180. PRESENT GERUND IN COMPOUND VERBAL EXPRESSIONS

b. It occurs sometimes in place of the more usual past gerund in -ئ in compound verbal expressions: توروب یائنتور turayattur (instead of توروب یائنتور turupyattur) he stands (right now). See below (sec. 186 following) regarding the use of the gerund in the formation of complex verbs.

181. VERB OF POSSIBILITY WITH ALMÄQ

c. The present gerund is important in forming the verb of possibility: present gerund plus all tenses of يا almaq. E.g., قیلاي يا qila-almäq, to be able to do. Often an -ئ is added after the present stem of the auxiliary and the compound is contracted as indicated in the following table.

-212-
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qila-almâyân (qilalâyân)</td>
<td>qila-alâyân (qilalâyân)</td>
<td>qila-alâyîdur (qilalâyîdu)</td>
<td>qila-alâyîmîz (qilalâyîmîz)</td>
<td>qila-alâyîsîz (qilalâyîsîz)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I, etc., can do;</td>
<td>I, etc., can do;</td>
<td>I, etc., can do;</td>
<td>I, etc., can do;</td>
<td>I, etc., can do;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qila-alâydo</td>
<td>qila-alâydo</td>
<td>qila-alâydo</td>
<td>qila-alâydo</td>
<td>qila-alâydo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</td>
<td>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</td>
<td>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</td>
<td>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</td>
<td>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Other tenses are formed in the same manner:  تلالايسن (تلالايسن) qila-alîm (qilalîm), I was able to do;  تلالايسن (تلالايسن) qila-alîsa (qilalîsa), if he is able to do. To get the negative forms the negative particle is inserted in the auxiliary:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
<th>تلالايسن (تلالايسن)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>qila-alîmâyân (qilalîmâyân), I cannot do;</td>
<td>qila-alîmât (qilalîmât), he was not able to do.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

182. PAST GERUND

The past gerund (consisting of verb stem plus -îp) is used a great deal in the formation of an expanded type of sentence. In a sentence communicating several simultaneous actions, or actions following one another, there is but one predicate in conjugated form. The other verbs are in the form of the past gerund which thus functions as an adverbial complement modifying the situation in which the basic action is completed. The subject must be the same for all verbs in the expanded sentence.

-213-
The closeness of relationship between the gerund and the main verb varies a great deal. Three degrees of relationship may be observed depending on how the gerund is used. The gerund functions as: (1) secondary predicate; (2) adverb, and (3) the main part of a complex verb. In many cases it is impossible to draw the line between one function and another.

163. SECONDARY PREDICATE

The loosest relationship between the past gerund and the main verb (conjugated) occurs in the type of sentence where the gerund functions as a secondary predicate expressing an action preceding (sometimes simultaneous with) that given by the main verb. This type of sentence can be greatly extended and the actions (or situations) may be only tenuously related to one another and to the final action expressed by the finite verb. On the other hand, the relationship may be very close with the subordinate verb expressing condition or cause.

This type of expanded sentence can be translated into English in a number of ways. If the actions or situations are felt to be independent or coordinate (of equal importance), the translation will be in two or more separate sentences, in a compound sentence with the clauses joined by and or but, or in a simple sentence with a compound predicate.

If the preceding actions are felt to be subordinate to that given by the main verb, the past gerund will be translated as a participial phrase or as a subordinate clause.
Ex.:

Series of successive actions:

Sadir qotup, käyimini käyip, qay iyip, meklupa kätti.

This sentence may be translated in any one of three ways:

a) Simple sentence with compound predicate: Sadir got up, dressed, drank some tea, (and then) went to school.

b) Simple sentence with participial phrases: After getting up and dressing and drinking some tea, Sadir went to school.

c) Complex sentence: After he got up and dressed and drank some tea, Sadir went to school.

The following example shows a series of successive actions of the 1st person imperative.

Bu yeni qilgan tæxni neyeti obdan cabdup, yeni beaati qiliip, altun kurnani qoyup, täyyar qiliip, gu yigit qiqqirip tekkip qilayli.

Let us equip this newly made throne very beautifully, lay new carpets, put on it a golden chair, and when we have made (all this) in order, let us (then) call that young man and make an invitation.

Coordinate actions (compound sentence):

Hava tutulup, yamjur yağdı.

The sky became clouded and it began to rain.
Köşni kütip aşaín qurug qapti.
He expected much, but he lost a little.

Guşni körsitip, üpka setiptu.
He showed the meat and sold the lungs. (Proverb)

Subordinate action (complex sentence):

Qurban öz dadisiidin pul olip, şitä berip esmekni setivaldı.
When (or as, because, after) he received (having received) money from his father, Qurban went to the city and bought the donkey.

Musa tu sözni aqlap tola xoşal toldi.
Musa became very happy when he heard these words.

184. NEGATIVE FORMS OF THE SECONDARY PREDICATE

When the secondary predicate requires a negative meaning, one of two forms is utilized:

a) The negative of the present gerund: verb stem plus ِئی
   -may, -mäy.

b) The negative of the future participle: verb stem plus
   عاس, -mäš plus ablative case ending -tin.
Both forms are used without reference to any particular tense and are usually translated without ... ing; e.g. qilmay, or qilmastin, without doing.

Ex.: 
Bu bazar ançi qisiq bolmay, äämälär yamen az kelidur.
This bazar is not so interesting, and very few people come.

Maça heç cyqmäy äydïn giqti.
Without saying a thing to me he left the house.

Padisah ularinäq gasıga harnay bir qaydä toxtap turdi.
The king did not go near them but stopped somewhere (*at a certain place*).

U heç neraä yemäy içmäy olturdi.
She sat without eating or drinking anything.

Yava hâyvanlarını olap qüzirmastin yeğûrdi.
Hunting wild animals, they used to eat without cooking (anything).

Bu hälşa qaylimastin yoldışim Sin Çaqışa bardi.
Without considering this situation, my comrade went to Sinkiang.
185. PAST GERUND AS ADVERB

If the past gerund stands directly before the main verb and relates only to it, it serves merely as an adverb describing the manner in which, or the circumstances under which, the action is taking place. The relationship between the gerund and the finite verb thus is much closer than in sentences where the gerund expresses an independent (even though often a subordinate) action. This usage is very common in East Turki and the string of modifying gerunds can be much extended. Often the gerund (or several gerunds) have a meaning similar to that of the main verb.

In many cases this type of past gerund will best be translated by the present participial form in -ing (or even its adverbial form, -ingly), or will be disregarded or translated by a general term as in the first example below where kirip kütip (lit. entering, going) modify the main verb barğan (which is going away) which in turn modifies kün sun; the literal phrase, the sun which is entering, going, going away is translated the setting sun. Note that in this example qarap is a secondary predicate.

Ex.: کریپ كتیپ بارگان کونغا قاراق سادیر اتیزگا چیقتی.
Kirip kütip barğan künqat qarap Sadir etizga qigi.
looking at the setting sun, Sadir went out to the field.

Since that man was not able to earn a living in his own country, he went to another country.
186. PAST GERUND IN THE FORMATION OF COMPLEX VERBS

The closest relationship between the past gerund and the finite verb exists in a verbal formation consisting of the past gerund and the conjugated form of certain verbs. The two forms
are more or less completely fused making up an entity called a "complex verb". The complex verb plays an extremely important role in East Turki in expressing fine shades of meaning.

The first element of the complex verbal unit is invariable and conveys the content of the action (what happens). The second element is variable (conjugated) and describes the form of the action (how it happens). The invariable part is the main verb and the variable is the auxiliary. Together, the two verbs as a complex unit have a new shade of meaning.

187. THE INvariable ELEMENT OF THE COMPLEX VERB

The invariable verb nearly always is in the form of the past gerund in -tī. Sometimes it takes the form of the present gerund in -s, -š; this is particularly true of the auxiliaries ِبِى, ِتِرِمِك, to give, and ِبِتِماق, to lie. The non-temporal gerund of purpose in ِغِيلي -یلی (-ینی) is encountered very rarely used in this way; see sentence 25 in Part VIII, section 252.

188. THE VARIABLE ELEMENT OF THE COMPLEX VERB

The variable (auxiliary) member of the complex verb is one of a number of common verbs in any tense or form including past participle or gerund or infinitive. The following list includes those most commonly used.
Verbs of motion (intransitive):

- barmaq: go, go away
- kälmäk: come
- kälmäk: go
- yûrmäk: walk, move
- ôlmäk: pass
- qîmäk: go out
- kirmäk (qîmäk): enter
- lîyımäk (qîmäk): fall

Verbs of state of being:

- tarmaq: stand
- yutmäq: lie
- qalmaq: remain
- bolmaq: be, become
- oltarmaq (oltarmaq): sit

Transitive verbs:

- bärmläk: give
- almaq: take
- qoymaq: put, place
189. VERBS OF MOTION AS AUXILIARY VERBS

All verbs of motion, used as auxiliaries, give to the complex verbal expression a sense suggesting direction.

قәйтқәндии qәйәп кәлдii "having gone out came" dropped in, got to a place

قәйтپ кәтти qәйәп кәтти "having gone out went" went out

әләп кәтти еләп кәтти "having taken went out" took out

әләп кәтти еләп кәтти "having taken went out" took away

әләп кәлдii еләп кәлдii "having taken came" brought

әләп кәрди еләп кәрди "having taken entered" brought in

әләп кәтти еләп кәтти "having died went" died

әләп кәрдii (әләп кәрдii) еләп кәрдii "having taken to go away" to carry, to take along

-222-
190. OTHER TYPES OF VERBS USED AS AUXILIARIES

Certain auxiliaries give the complex verb a shade of meaning suggesting long continued action. These are: üçme, yürümek, walk, move; hırsız, hırsızlık, steal; yataq, yatmaq, lie, sit. The other verbs commonly used as auxiliaries have special meanings. These will be explained in the following section and examples given to show how complex verbs are used.

191. a) hırsız, go, go away

(1) Direction away:

من اتى سنتيب باردين.
Muh ałyq minip barimka.
I ride away on horseback.
(*having mounted the horse. I go away.*)

تین کونی اتیک کنیب بارادر.
Üm küni istik ketip baridu.
Winter days pass (go away) quickly.

(2) Incomplete action:

قَلَامَار اوز تَوْپَارْنِیْت اوتلاطْب بَارادوَر.
Galmaxlar öz qoylirini oltutap baridu.
The Kalmaks go about pasturing their sheep.
b) kalak, come: approaching movement; incomplete action.

Qadir bay qoylini heydop kaldi.
Qadir Bay came driving the sheep.

Kullar yil yenidn teyp kaldi.
The children came gathering fruit.

Note: In the above examples English has the same construction: came driving, came gathering.

Amir axun 1940 yildir bari dixamiliq qilip kaladi.
Amir has been since 1940 has been engaged in agriculture.

Xatoon yunun yunus qilip kelip bardi.
His wife brought meat and bread and gave (it to him).

Qadir shehurin yenip kaldi.
Qadir returned (returning came) from the city.
193. c) **kütük, go:** movement away; removal.

Sadir suya qusup ketti.
*Sadir fell (*"went falling") into the water.*

Deganlar qoqa qiqip kätip baridu.
The peasants are heading for the field (*"having gone out are going").

Yol bilin bir atliq kişi şüp kätip barar edi.
*A horseman passed by the road.*

Ular şulon türüpşən qoqip qiqip kätidu.
*Having escaped, they are going off toward Kuldja.*

Yaz küni şüp ketti.
*Sumner days passed (completely).*

194. d) **yürük, go, walk, move:** movement in general not directed in any particular direction; general conduct.

Qasgar da ballar sowıni besiğa qoyap, teșkini teşup yürüdü. *In Kashgar children, putting baskets on their heads, walk about gathering dung (for fuel).*
Horun adamlar heq nimâ qilmay yûrûdu.
Lazy people do nothing (as a custom).

Siilâ(r) nimâ qilip yûrûslâ(r)?
What do you do (for a living)?

195. e) The following all show movement in the direction indicated:

- qûsmûk (tûsmûk) fall: movement downward
- qîqmaq, go out: movement outward
- kirmûk (qiymûk), enter: movement inward

Ex.: Yoynu tag taq'adin yumulanup qûslû ketidu.
A huge stone comes rolling down the mountain.

- Tûsh o'zobob qinti.
The bird flew away.

- Atni istyp qinti.
He went out to look for the horse.
Dixenlar bazarya otannı yamen çıq elip çırıdız (çırıdız).
The peasants bring a great deal of firewood to the bazar.

Su čırqa eqip çırıdız.
The water flows into the canal.

Turmaq, stand: continuing, lasting action.

Tăqămın astında yoğan çaq aylinip turudu.
Underneath the mill the great wheel turns (continually).

Hər häptidü təngəḵşilər iş həqini elip turudu.
Every week the workers receive their wages.

Mən sizni saqlap turmişən.
I am waiting for you.

Bügün biz ərtəzin külüqəq işləp turduq.
Today we worked (without stopping) from morning till night.

Tündəkün yamışır yəğip turğan edı.
It was raining yesterday (all day).
197. (g) qalnaq, remain: completion of action, arrival of the final moment of action.

دوشمن بيزنيق تويليمت توشنوب تادب
Dushman bazineq qolimizqa gushiq qaldi.
The enemy fell into our hands.

ايسدين يقيق تادب
Eimdin qilip qaldi.
It (completely) escaped my mind.

سن ته ايشكه ايرليب تادب؟
Sân nâmâ ışkâ ayrilip qalâq?
Why did you go off by yourself (*remain separated*)?

198. (h) qoymaq, place, put: suddenness, unexpectedness, or completion of action.

اوس سراط بازنتوه ايجيدا بولو بار خورجيئين بيتوب قويدي
U särâjiq harcmaqta izidâ puli bur xorqunni yiturup qoydi.
While going to the village, he lost (unexpectedly) the saddlebag that contained the money.

تاابده ات با ايشاك باشين كونرووب تويما بازالريغ همس
Nevada ut ya eslık besini kötürüp qoysa, ballarami hâmisi tâq yuguruda.
If a horse or donkey raises (suddenly) its head, all the children run racing (each other).
196. i) ىرط ص برمك, give

(1) Action carried out for the benefit of someone other than the actor.

Yoldinin'm baikini oqip beridu.
He is reading ("having read gives") the book (aloud) to my comrade.

(2) Unlimited, persistent action.

Yümeqılış man berde beldezi hajji toral ulu ugrimay tartip katta bari (ketiveridu).
The root (of the plant), not meeting resistance in worked earth, extends itself (tartip) and steadily develops ("going gives").

(3) Obstinacy, insistence, or precipitateness of action.

Bu kisi meniq öyündin katta barasun (ketiversun).
Let this man take himself out of my house now.

Sirlga semailar disən silər qəntni nayiti tola sala bariqlar.
Although I tell you not to ("if I say, "do not put"), you all the same put in too much sugar.

-229-
The following words both give the basic verb a sense suggesting trial, attempt and will be translated try, attempt and the like.

- کۆرماک körmäk see
- بەماک bəmaq see, watch, look after

او دەوانیتەوە، ئیشاتینە کەبەدایی کوردی.
Il dəwənjîxət etməkni həydəp kördi.
He tried to derive the donkey to the pass.

- اوکار اوچووب باختی.
Ular uçup həxəti.
They attempted to fly.

- ٣٠١. ح) آلماک almaq: take

(1) Action carried out for the benefit of the actor himself.

- تەپەی کوچولو چو تەومان بەدەرکەن بۆڵەسەری تەریبی لەدەو.
The stronger ones (as far as bəloa — which are strong) gather (for themselves) the fruit that has fallen.

- ئاتۆخچی بو تەپەی کەبەدایی لەدەو.
The student is reading this interesting book (for himself).
(2) Possibility of carrying out an action. Possibility is expressed normally by means of the present gerund (verb stem plus -a, -к) plus ана ца almaq. However, sometimes the past gerund is used in the same way.

Даны китин ачча дуним.
Bu xatni oqip almidim.
I could not read this letter.

202. болмаq, become, be

(1) Completeness of action; the auxiliary verb is in the past tense.

Женидики су ичип бойди.
 Günidiki su içilip boldi.
The water in the cup was all drunk up.
(2) Possibility of carrying out an action; the auxiliary is in the present tense.

اریک سوینی اچچی یکلادور؟
Eriq suyini ikip bolmdu?
Can the water in the ditch be drunk?

پو نارسینی چچ بولماً
Bu narsini yap bolmas.
This (thing) cannot be eaten (is inedible).
PART XI

PARTICIPIAL CONSTRUCTION

203. SYNTACTIC USE OF PARTICIPLES

Of utmost importance in the East Turki language is participial construction, which is the utilization of participles to expand the various parts of the sentence—subject, noun modifiers, direct and indirect objects and adverbial complements—in order to express a complex idea. The participle used thus may have its own modifiers and its own subject but is itself subordinated to the main verb (the predicate) of the basic sentence. All the words making up this participial phrase together are equivalent to a subordinate clause in English.

204. DISTINCTION BETWEEN PRESENT AND PAST PARTICIPLES

Most commonly used in this construction is the past participle (verb stem plus νη —ταν). However, if the customary or continuing nature of the action is stressed, the present participle (verb stem plus νην —ταν) may be used. Neither form implies any particular tense; in translation the tense used in the subordinate clause will be determined by that of the main verb.
NEGATIVE PARTICIPLE

The negative participle is derived in the regular manner by means of the negative particle لا -ma, inserted between the verb stem and the participial ending: قيلماّْقان qilmagaْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْْ*)
The participle used substantively is a verbal noun, or "a noun of action". As a noun it can be declined in all cases and is used with post-positions and takes possessive suffixes. Its basic character as an adjective is shown by the fact that the possessive suffix is affixed (often omitted when the subject of the participle is in the third person) to relate it to an antecedent (stated or left understood).

207. STRUCTURE OF THE PARTICIPIAL PHRASE

The structure of the participial phrase in which the participle functions as a substantive in a definite case can assume one of two forms. In the first form, the participle is impersonal, i.e. the person is not indicated by the possessive suffix, and the subject is in the nominative case.

أو کئلگندیا من کئابن اوتئودم.
Il käylgindâ mân kitapni oqdum.
When he came, I read the book.

In the second form, the person is indicated by the possessive suffix attached to the participle and the subject is in the genitive case. The meaning is the same with both types.

اوئیئگ کئلگندیا من کئابن اوتئودم.
Unîq käylgindâ mân kitapni oqdum.
When he came ("at his coming"), I read the book.

(مئینگ) کئابن اوتئونابدا پدئادیم کوردی (چیدی).
When (while) I was reading ("at my reading") the book, my comrade entered.
The expanded participial modifier is a participial phrase in which the governing word, expressed by the participle in 

\(\text{پر کتابی انتخابی از تربیت کتی.}

\(\text{پر کتابی انتخابی از تربیت کتی.}

The student, who took this book, (*this-book-taking-student*) went from the house

the participial phrase includes the participle and its direct object; the subject is left understood.

\(\text{پر خانه کتابی از تربیت کتی.}

\(\text{پر خانه کتابی از تربیت کتی.}

The street, along which that child walked, was very long.

The above participial phrase, consisting of subject and participle, modifies \(\text{kocha}\), the subject of the main verb of the sentence, \(\text{edi.}\)
The above sentence contains two participial phrases:

bir kişi algan satqan modifies malni which is the direct object of the main verb of the sentence; bay ottargan modifies yargi which is an adverbial complement of the main verb.

In the above participial phrase the subject is in the first person; the participle is in an impersonal form with no ending. Note use of emäs for yoq. While the main verb is in the present tense, sense requires the preterite in the subordinate clause in translation.

The participle in the above sentence is in present tense form to show customary action. The following will show the difference in meaning between the two participles used as modifiers:

yüşdiğon buğday, edible wheat, wheat suitable (intended) for eating (general description);  yüşgân buğday, wheat which was eaten (particular act).
209. **Expanded Participial Substantive**

The expanded participial substantive is a participial phrase in which the governing word in the form of the participle in -ма (or -дурган) takes various case endings. The case endings indicate the relationship of the participial phrase to the main verb of the basic sentence. The expanded genitive modifier relates to the subject (below).

210. a) Nominative case: expanded subject.

**سرالیقیلرین یراق بولجینی چار بازیریغا هارمادу.**
Those of the villagers who are far away ("the villagers:→far-being-ones") do not go to the city bazar.

The participial phrase **سرالیقیلرین یراق بولجینі** is the subject of the main verb of the sentence, barmaydu, and consists of subject, adverbial complement and predicate. The participle has affixed a possessive suffix which relates it to the antecedent precisely as in the following sentence which has an adjective used substantively and modified by a noun in the genitive as the subject.

**با بالالارینهٔ کچیکلری او بردا اوینایدور.**
The smallest of the children (those of the children who are smallest) are playing there.

**او شهدار اولوگ اولنینهٔ کچگینهٔ هرچ کچگهٔ معلم ایبیس اید.**
The coming of the great man to the city was not known to anyone.

-233-
Your doing that difficult task in a short period of time surprised us.

The subject of the English sentence your doing is analogous to that of the East Turkic sentence, qilginiğiz.

Aytqanim yeman bakk edî.
What I said was not bad.

211. b) Genitive case: expanded genitive modifier.

The ears of the one who has taken two wives will not be quiet. (Proverb)

The hand of the one who has lent to the thief fears everybody. (Proverb)

He had written down an explanation of how he had fled after making all the idols of gold into iron.
The structure of the expanded genitive modifier is analogous to that of the expanded subject. The participle, which ends in ـگاننى، modifies the subject of the main verb (as in the above two examples), or some other noun of the basic sentence. The participle, itself dependent on the word it modifies, has a series of complements subordinate to it. In the genitive form, it has the meaning of the one who.

In the following example the participial phrase modifies not the subject but the indirect object of the main verb.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{بلى} & \quad \text{القائه} \\
\text{دئي} & \quad \text{من} \\
\text{اپا} & \quad \text{لا} \\
\text{بلاق.} & \quad \text{Reli} \\
\text{اپیریا} & \quad \text{نام} \\
\text{یژیسیا} & \quad \text{با.} \\
\text{Look at the bread-eating of the one with the 
eching belly. (Proverb.)}
\end{align*}
\]

Note: Another type of expanded genitive modifier is possible. This utilizes a noun with possessive suffix plus the impersonal expletive verbs ـبار، there is and ـیو، there is not. The expression is equivalent to a relative clause stating the possession of something:

Ex.:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ایشی} & \quad \text{باز} \\
\text{اپادام} & \quad \text{اچ} \\
\text{بولومدار.} & \quad \text{Igi bar äänm aç bolmeydu.} \\
\text{The man who has work (the-he-has-work-men-)} & \quad \text{will not be hungry.}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{سوی} & \quad \text{یو} \\
\text{اریق.} & \quad \text{Siyi yoq eriq.} \\
\text{The ditch that has no water.}
\end{align*}
\]
212. c) Accusative case: expanded direct object.

This complement consists of a group of words governed by a predicate expressed by the participle in -ğa standing in the accusative case with possessive suffix (ğaini). This predicate is governed by the predicate of the basic sentence.

The expanded complement in the accusative case has two distinct functions: (1) expanded direct object; (2) indirect discourse.

213. Expanded direct object.

Dexanler qışqa yölğen içidiğlarını öyləydi. Peasants store up food and drink (*that which is to be eaten and that which is to be drunk*) for winter.

The participle phrase consists of two parallel predicates and the adverbal complement, qışqa. The participles are in the present tense as denoting a generalized (not particular), long-lasting action. Note that syntactic endings (plural sign, possessive suffix, case ending) are attached only to the last word in a series (here consisting of two items) but apply equally to both words. The conjunction and is left understood.

Hölünqünü böri yur. The wolf will eat up the one separated (from the flock). (Proverb.)

Alğanını bęrgil. Give back what you took.
Indirect discourse.

The expanded direct object is utilized in indirect discourse. The form of the participle is the same as in the above examples; it is the direct object of the main verb. In the case of indirect discourse the verb of the basic sentence is a verb of saying, thinking, knowing, seeing, feeling, and the like, and the participial phrase is translated into English by a subordinate clause introduced by that. Functioning as a direct object the participle is translated the one who, or the one which.

I saw the stone come rolling down the mountain (I saw that the stone rolled down the mountain).

I knew well that my comrade has come.

We knew well that there is a Thursday bazaar in the city of Qo'qal.

Sadir, not knowing nor he got this into his hands, stood for a long time.
215. d) Dative case: expanded adverbial complement.

Kaşgar'a kalktikten sonra ötün boldi.

Oșqärña kälginimyä on kün boldi.

It has been ten days since I came to Kashgar (I came to Kashgar ten days ago).

Bu xütäni yäsäniyä tört ay boldi.

He wrote this letter four months ago.

("It was four months to his writing this letters")

Most often, as in the above, the participle in the dative case expresses the idea of since or ago. Sometimes it denotes cause as in the following two examples.

Kün qäqqana issiq boldi.

It became hot when (because) the sun came out.

Mën büğday çegoğ yürügäni köröp, näma qäçesiz däp euriğenä açığım küldi.

I became angry because (when) he, seeing me planting wheat, asked me, "What are you planting?"

The following is a type of indirect discourse;

Arxšaq, to look like, takes the dative.

Musa axun kälğaŋa oşpändi.

Musa axun kälğaŋa oşpändi.

It looks like Musa Axun is coming.
216. e) Locative case: expanded adverbial complement.

When the predicate of the participial phrase is in the locative case (ئەلانە -خەنە), the expanded participle will be translated into English by a subordinate clause introduced by when. The subject of the participial phrase, indicated by the possessive suffix, is often omitted in the third person.

٤اشتر ٧ازارو٧ا كەگەنەدا بۆرەنون شەهرەم سەوا ادەدە٧ارەن كەڕەکە.
Oxqar basirişka kälginimda nurjin gur him sëra adëmirini kërdim.
When I came to the Kashgar bazar, I saw many city and village people.

اوتري تەنوب او٧ان توْن بلان كەجادا بەگەگەدا كەناڭان.
Oxri tutup alyun toxa bilan koçuda yugurşënda xoçunar hoxmini hüyrun bolep uga qaylidë.
When they saw the thief with the chicken he had taken running along the street, all the women looked at him with surprise.

کەسە ٢اڕەنە گەرەب پانتەنە بەسە حەویليندا گەرەدی.
Kësësë orunça kirip yatsënda birisi hoylişa kërdi.
At night just as he was going to bed, someone entered the courtyard.

Note: The participle in the locative case of قا٧یلا qayla:
قا٧یلا٧ا qaylişënda, when one looks at, is used in the sense of compared with. This verb governs the dative case.

ايلی دیکە هوا كون جەنگەن تەركستانەدا ٧اییلا٧ا٧ا پەسە سەگاترە.
Ilidi hava kün çiğis Türkistan'ga qaylişënda piskë soğuqraq.
The Ili climate, compared to that of East Turkestan, is rather cold.

-244-
217. f) Ablative case: expanded adverbial complement.

The participle in the ablative case expresses cause. The participial phrase is translated by a subordinate clause introduced by because.

Because (since, as) we did not go to the Kashgar bazar, the customs officer did not stamp our goods.

If the participle in the ablative is followed by a post-position such as يْرِ, since, گین (کین) keyin, after, یلگیری, before, or یول ایووُل, before, the participial phrase will be translated by a temporal clause or participial phrase introduced by since, after, or before.

Since I came (since my coming) to the city of Moscow, my family has lived very well.

After he seized (after seizing) the big chicken, the thief quickly ran away from the courtyard.
After the rain stopped, Musa left the city.

Before seizing this big chicken, the thief looked to all ("four") sides.

Before stamping the handi craftsman’s goods, the bay took the money from him and, seated in his place, put the stamp in the fire.

Other Types of Expanded Participial Complements

Participles used substantively occur with post-positions and the suffixes داک and چَ. They are equivalent to subordinate clauses or participial phrases in English. The most important post-positions used with participles are:

بَلَان, with or by means of and اَلْجُرْجُن, because, and to a lesser extent تَوْرُسِدَا, and تَحَقِّیدَا, both meaning concerning or in relation to.

a) بَلَان, is used with joint actions which depend on one another, or where one action is the cause from which arises a certain result. Often it is equivalent to an English clause of
concession introduced by "although" or "despite the fact that".

Despite the fact that it rained in Kashgar, grain is not growing too well.

Although there is an abundance of water in Ili, rain still is necessary.

One does not get understanding (become intelligent) by reading foolish books.

One will not complete the task by weeping.

Because of the lack of experts in Sinkiang, natural resources are very little exploited.
Yolchim meniq quyandini pulini alqinini haggida xizmir yoq edi.
There was no information concerning the fact that my comrade had taken money from my house.

This suffix, attached to the participle, is used to liken one action to another and usually is translated by the conjunctions as if, as though, or like, or as, or by an expression like almost, as in the fourth example below.

I cannot eat like he eats.

Turning like a boulder torn off the mountain, the slain wolf fell into the water of the river.
Tört hân yüâl kipî yoq bolup köyp kàtkândük holdi.

Four or five hundred people were destroyed as if (completely) burned up.

Yergû kirğandük boldim.
I almost sank into the ground.

Hazer bundaq institüt teskil qilingan bolup, buning nimaamàendi bildenulganidi, bu mintiga tabii va ictimai ilimlar o'chitida buyuk farsatlarni to'g'ardiqtu.

Now such an institute has been formed, and as stated in its constitution, the region will give rise to a great opportunity in the field of the natural and social sciences.

Bir yil kabad bolgandaq kütüp dori.
It looked as if he had been till a year.

223. e) қилғ, attached to the participle in қилинг, expresses an action on which the occurrence of another action (given by the main verb) is contingent or to which the action is likened. This suffix қилинг ғажапдун қилғ is usually translated until, as, as long as, as far as, and the like.
Aytağanıq bolur.
It will be as you have said.

Büzden kəsi xələğanlıqə bəxə alədi.
A person could eat as much as he wanted of this.

Biz sənini xələğən Vişkula giləngən gilənəq.
We did for you as we had promised.

Bizniq icənim Xələğinə xin xayərdə gəlinəq Eməfini.
We must remain here until our father comes from the city.

Bəxə höxtəlağinə Şəhərə yarinəmiz.
We will not go to the city until the goods are sold.

A variant of the above form utilizes the dative case
ending which is inserted between the participial ending and
ə- qə- şəxə- bəxə- Şəxə- şəxə. This complement indicates the
interval between two actions of which one takes place before
the other.
The above forms have the same meaning as that given by the non-temporal gerund in چونچه -چونچه; see section 176.
PART XII

COMPLEX SENTENCES

224. TYPES OF COMPLEX SENTENCES

Complex sentences which consist of a main clause and one or more subordinate clauses with independent predicates are comparatively rare in the East Turki language. Gerundial and participial construction is more characteristic of the language.

However, subordinate clauses introduced by the conjunctions قünkî, because and کی or کیم, that are much used. The syntactic uses of the conditional forms of the verb in subordinate clauses is of great importance. Finally, the past gerund of دەک, to say, دەپ, dep, is utilized in direct discourse which often is equivalent to a complex sentence in English with the subordinate clause introduced by that or in order that.

225. CAUSAL CLAUSE

سين جاکیة ایچکی خێتای بڵان سودا ەلتیس
او تەر کەیەکی بەمەس قەنتی بۆل بەراق هەم یەان.

Sin Çagniŋ iga Xitay belän soda alegişi u qëdër kaj ämsi qünkî yol yiraq hüm xaman.

The trade relations of Sinkiang with inner China are not so very extensive because the road is long and poor.

-253-
This trade with inner China, Hindustan and Afghanistan does not greatly ("at a wide extent") satisfy the people of Sinkiang, because the goods coming from there are very expensive.

226. **SUBSTANTIVE CLAUSE**

The conjunction گي (or گم kim), that, introduces a subordinate clause which is a direct complement of the main verb. The verb usually signifies saying, thinking, asking, feeling, and the like; this is often equivalent to an indirect statement in English.

- بېرغي مېلېم گي سین جاله هندستان بلان سودا علاقېسي سپلادر.
  - *It is known to us that Sinkiang has trade relations with Hindustan.*

- تېز اودان بېلېمارکي توبول ووژنولاند تېېگوئيد.
  - *We know well that the Qosul revolt is ended.*
More commonly, however, this conjunction serves to introduce a direct statement.

عبدراحمان خان بريبين کورب آتختي آن bắt.
Abdulrahman gani körüp ayttiki ey bari.
Abdulrahman, seeing this, said, “O bari!”

اسکتدر اسلامین سورادیم کسی سوزوزار نیمه کسی ادیگیزلاز.
Dedikim, alti miq kişi edik.
Iskander asked the iman, “How many men were you?”
He said, “We were six thousand men.”

خان خان خان خان خان خان خان وارانتن تیلده کسی اسکتدر اسلام باشلاق.
Masum Xan Xoqam ýarliq qildikim, Iskander iman bašliq öunli tanga ni va yarkändiliq hâmmaciña döhil qilmaglar.
Masum Xan Xoqa ordered, “Do not interfere with (in the affairs of) the Tungans and the Yarkändi under the leadership of iman Iskander.”

The above sentence can be translated, of course, as an indirect statement: Masum Xan Xoqa ordered that they were not to interfere etc. Usually the direct quotation is closed by dép, saying, as in the following sentence; see section on direct discourse below.

د ادي ديدي کي مسؤل تازتق اريدا باتيتي ديب زروب بري.
U bari dedi ki, mequl! qaznaq ýyda yatqin dép ÿlvay berdi. That bari replied, “All right! Lie in the store-room!” (lit., “That bari said that . . . . saying replied.”)
The conjunction is combined with the demonstrative pronoun 
šō, that, giving a compound, шоқи suki, or sukim, meaning, the fact that.

... (additional text)

The difference between a house and a school building lies in the fact that a recess is made in the house (wall) on which to put cups, plates and spoons; there is no such recess in the school walls.

227. DIRECT DISCOURSE

Very often direct discourse is given by means of the gerund қай, saying to separate the quotation from the main part of the sentence and without the introductory conjunction қай as in the sentence above. In many cases қай is not translated; it might be termed a "quotation particle".

In a great many cases this type of sentence will be treated in English translation as an indirect quotation with the words of the speaker given in a subordinate clause with the conjunction that and with the verb changed to the third person. In other cases this construction expresses purpose and қай will be translated in order to.

ما آت تى دېب آبى?
Musa at qen i deg aytti.
"Musa asked, "Where is the horse?"
Bir kisi esıkkke kälip, Sadir barmu düp çişqirdi.
A person came to the door and called out, "Is Sadir there?"

The following sentences have the same structure as the ones above; however, they may be properly translated in the form of indirect statements.

Dadam xetidä bir aydın keyin kälimän düp yazdi.
My father wrote in his letter that he will come after one month. (Lit., My father wrote in his letter saying, "I will come after one month.")

Tursun bay män seniŋ yening yaŋan xewür bilän käldim düp ätti.
Tursun Bay said that he was coming to him ("to your side") with bad news.

USE OF DƏP TO EXPRESS PURPOSE

Often this type of sentences expresses goal or purpose.

Dexanlar bujlay oremis düp ejingi kätip baridu.
The peasants are going to the field to harvest ("in order that they might harvest" or "in order to harvest") wheat.
Man bazarğa nən alımən dəp qaldım.
I came to the bazar to buy some bread.

Nə yaxud dəp qaldın? Why did you come?

229. USE OF DEP TO EXPRESS CAUSE

The conjunction dəp may denote because.


Your friends have gone; why have you remained by yourself? The girl said: "I was by myself because it is raining hard and my clothes will get wet."

230. USE OF DEP WITH THE IMPERATIVE TO EXPRESS PURPOSE

In the following sentences, which express purpose, the secondary verb is in the imperative (actually, the optative) mood.

U məhəllidin bu məhəlləyə əyən dəp qaldım. I came from that quarter (of the city) to this quarter in order to work.
Sadir mounted the horse in order to go to the city (Sadir mounted the horse saying, "Let me go to the city").

The gentlemen arranged matters so that he might not commit (... arranged; let us say, "do not commit...") such atrocities, and that, if he did not obey their words, they would denounce him to the Chinese ("let us denounce").

Alexander the Great slew the barbers that shaved his head in order that the people might not know that he had horns (slew... saying "let not the people know of my being horned").

Sadir asked that this question be put separately before the assembly.
USE OF دپ WITH THE IMPERATIVE TO STATE A POLITE REQUEST

Note that in the last three examples above دپ plus 3rd person imperative expresses the subjunctive mood: so that he might not commit, in order that the people might not know, and that this question be put.

The last example above states a polite request. In the form of a direct statement, it could be translated: "Sadir requested, "Please put this question separately before the assembly."

Please give.

Please take (some).

Please raze (the house).
232. SPECIAL USE OF DEMÎK WITH THE IMPERATIVE

1st person of دمیک, say, is used with the 1st person imperative to convey the sense of "I am thinking of ..." doing something.

\[\text{اعبدی اورک یاری دیهیم.}\]
\[\text{یمی اوری بارا دیمیهیم.}\]
\[\text{Now I am thinking of going home.}\]

\[\text{مونی اوری دیهیم.}\]
\[\text{مونی اوری دیمیهی.}\]
\[\text{I am thinking of buying this.}\]
\[\text{("I say let me buy this")}\]

233. COMPLEX SENTENCES WITH CONDITIONAL FORMS OF THE VERB

Conditional forms of the verb are employed mostly in subordinate clauses. The conditional clause states a condition on which the main action is contingent. When the main verb governs a conditional clause (which precedes it), it usually expresses the subjunctive mood and is translated "would . . . ."

234. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

To express a condition contrary to fact the conditional verb may be either in the simple past tense with the main verb in the imperative (habitual) tense: -sa edim . . . . -sr edim, if I were . . . . I would; or in the past perfect with the auxiliary لاپس: bolaa and with the main verb compounded in

-261-
an analogous manner: —I had been edim . . . —I would have.

The first form is equivalent to the present subjunctive and the second to the past subjunctive of English.

Often the conditional clause is introduced by a conjunction: اکر اگر, if or if, in case that.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

اکر بیژ شکر، بایسا ایدون لایخیر نیلیس نویدان بیلر ایدن.

اکر بیژ شکر، بایسا ایدون لایخیر نیلیس نویدان بیلر ایدن.

\[ \text{If we went to Kashgar, we would learn the Uighur language well.} \]

نیوادا نیز، نیز وردیبیسی بایسا سیکالاپیوردان بایلیدی بولامای

نیوادا نیز، نیز وردیبیسی بایسا سیکالاپیوردان بایلیدی بولامای

\[ \text{If there were no remedies to protect the garden from harmful worms, the struggle against these harmful worms would be very difficult for the gardener.} \]

پیونر بیژ شکر، بایسا ایدون لایخیر ایدن

پیونر بیژ شکر، بایسا ایدون لایخیر ایدن

\[ \text{If he called us today, we would go.} \]
236. PAST SUBJUNCTIVE

Yoldişim kitägän oquşan bolsa edı u maqa baryän bolar edı (bolatti).

If my comrade had read the book, he would have given it to me.

Akr arovok yştän bolsa edı başqılar arıñı basara.

If the apricots had been ripe, the gardener would have taken them (akkolip) to the bazar and sold them.

237. PRESENT CONDITIONAL

In the simple present form the conditional states the premise of the main action given by a verb in the indicative mood. The sentence expresses an actual fact. The conditional clause usually is equivalent in English either to a conditional clause or to a temporal clause introduced by the conjunction when.

Meniq dadam kalsk, män mekteqä barımän.

When my father comes, I am going to school.
When our task is finished, we'll spend our free time well. (Or, "if our task were finished, we would...")

Sometimes the main clause states an action which is rather loosely related to that given by the conditional clause and which may be a result unexpected by the speaker.

Eriniq yenijə bərsə qoylırlı su ərdə yərəptil.
He went to the bank ("side") of the canal but ("when he went ...") the sheep were there moving about.

Bir kün Sadir kəşəqə qıqəa sada pül bilən tələqən bir xaltını təpti.
One day when Sadir went out on the street, he found a wallet full of money there (... went out and found ...)

Körəp qoysə, eti etizdin kəttin.
He looked up (suddenly) but his horse was gone from the field. ("when he looked up, his horse...")

Öyğə kəlməm, öydə huy kim yox edən.
I came home but no one was there ("when I came home, no one...")
The present conditional occurs also in a complex sentence
in which the main verb in the form of the imperfect (habitual)
tense expresses the subjunctive mood (translated "would ".),
denoting timid affirmation or the assumption of the possibility
of the action.

ماکتاکه بارساک یخشی بولار ایدی.
Maktækä barasaq yaxši bolar edí.
If you went to school, it would be good.

اوتوسام بیلار ایدیم.
Oqusam billär edím.
If I study, I’ll know.

بولسی بولسی بو ترىللرین آر ایدیم.
Pulim bolsa bu nærsilärni alar edím.
If I had money, I would buy these things.

Sometimes the main verb is in the present tense.

منن الساقار یخشی بولادور.
Muni ašaqlar yaxši boladu.
If you take this, it will be good.

ایمی بیرده هر بیلاردین سویاشینیک بار ارنه اون ییکمه
آدام بار جایدا اون ییکمه تسیی طبیعت بولادور.
Endi bu yerdä hær birlärindin sorašìnìq bar ersä, on
yigermä adäm bar qayda on yigermä qısmi täbìyyät boladur.
If I now had to query everyone here, (I should find
that) there will be ten or twenty tastes (in a place)
where there are ten or twenty people.
240. PAST CONDITIONAL

To state in past time a premise of the main action given by a verb in the indicative mood, two basic forms of the past conditional are available: қилса едим and қилган болсам if I did, or when I did (see sec. 152-53).

241. USE OF THE CONDITIONAL TO EXPRESS WISH

The present conditional is found as the main verb in sentences expressing the wish or intention of the speaker to carry out an action.

Atam bolsa, көрсөм мен
Had I a father, may I see him (I'd like to see him)

Atam болса, көрсөм мен
Had I a mother, may I see her (I'd like to see her)

Atam bilän суунун эң чынды олсөм мен.
May I die at the feet of my father and mother.

Мен Көрө және бұрышда тәрізді сүр ярмағым болса.
I wish I'd have four sar of money when I go to Kura.

-266-
Buğdayın tola çiqsa şu qarşılırmıya bərsəm dədim.

I was thinking of paying on those debts if my wheat crop were good ("came out much").

242. USE OF THE CONDITIONAL TO EXPRESS POLITE REQUEST

This construction also is used to express indecisive request or polite address.

Kasgarın küləndin kəyin həkimliyə oğli yənsəm dəp ruxsat tələdi.

After the judge’s son came to Kashgar, he requested leave to return ("he requested leave saying, 'May I return?'").

Çay içsəmlər?

Would you like (to drink) some tea?

Aylık bərəsmə?

May I (please) go home?

Azılayğa bərəsmə?

May I give you (some)?

Dədəmənə qeydəy dərə pəyda qıladur dərə qılsalar.

Please make whatever medicine that will be beneficial for my father.
243. ٓٛٓٓٔٓٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓٔٓ_
245. CONCESSIONAL CLAUSE

A subordinate clause of concession is formed by the addition of the particle ۷۰۰۰ mu to the present conditional. Sometimes هم also, replaces ۷۰۰۰ mu; on occasion neither is used. The concessional clause is translated into English with the conjunctions although, even if, despite the fact that.

من بروون ساک کلسام مو پارده قیلماقجی ایاسین.
Mēn būghūn saqī kūlasam muqaddam qilmagiq ēnasān.  
Even though I am coming to you today, I do not intend to help you.

بی سوداکر اوز مالین اردن ساتسا مو براق خاذا از بولادور.
Bu sōdāqar ʿūz malīn arīdan satṣam mu brāq ṭāḏa aṣ bālādūr.  
Although this merchant sells his goods well, he nevertheless makes little profit.

سیزا یمانراق بولسا مو بر یلنا یتکیداک چیتدور.
Sāznā yemanraq bolsam, bir yilga yetkidāq qiqīdu.  
Although the carrots are rather poor, the yield is sufficient for a year.
Although I offered him (I thought "I will give you") the lame sheep, he says he will take the healthy one.

Even if I cross it, my small children cannot cross the river.

Despite that, trade relations exist between Sinkiang and other countries.

Despite the fact that roads in Sinkiang are long and poor, caravan trade connections are increasing.
247. a) ABSOLUTE CONSTRUCTION WITH BOLSA

The present conditional form of 3rd person singular of یئ "bol-" bolsa, *if it is*, is much used in an absolute clause serving to focus attention on the subject being discussed. The subject is in the nominative case and precedes bolsa, which is translated as regards, with reference to, as to, regarding, as for, and like expressions.

سین جالُل نیک دندستان افغانستان بلان علامی بو لاس

پرو ائجھ کالہ راویشتا ایپاس.

Sin Caqqni Hindustan Afghanistan bilan bataqisi bolsa bu anqi kią ræwistá smán.

As regards relations between Sinkiang and Hindustan and Afghanistan, they are not very extensive.

پااج پولسا بو پنجھ زمان تیجه خیرتی حکومتیناق تشولیدا ایدی.

Bec bolsa bir mnuqá ñeemangiqqát Xitay hokümitinòg golida edi (goliditi).

As to the customs, they were in the control (*"in the hands"*) of the Chinese government until recently (*"up to a certain time"*).

من بولسا سوزیکا کیرپ اتیش قصیتا سامتم.

Mun bolsa, söjíq kiriq etimni qasapqa sattim.

As for me, listening to him (*"entering in his words"*), I sold my horse to the butcher.

اکرک پولسا اورنک اوجچینی بر دینا اورونش اجب

Ajjal siqqa jìn kà ræmiq Lathırkà dîmèshi dë vayldòr.

Amerika bolsa, unq ñuqniq bir dúña uruşi aqiq aqmaælìgi, gin komunistlärinìq væniyetiæ vaijilidìr.

As to America, whether or not she opens the third world war depends on the behavior of the Chinese Communists.

-271-
249. ABSOLUTE CONSTRUCTION WITH ALSAQ

Also, the present conditional of اتساق, to take, is used analogously, but the subject is in the accusative case.

سین چې دیکی پولیسی ساق نهیتی یبان.

Sin Ceqdi ki jollirni alsaq, nayiti yamen.

As to ("if we take") Sinkiang roads, they are extremely poor.

250. b) USE OF BOLMAQ TO EXPRESS POSSIBILITY

In conjunction with a verb in the present conditional, بولماق bolmaq in the present or future tenses expresses possibility and is translated can, be able to, may and the like.

الساق بولمند؟

Alsam bolamdu?

May I take (this)?
السلاک بودور
Alsag bolidu.
You may take (some).

خانم بولار آتان
Bu atqa minsä bolar akän.
I can (probably) mount this horse.

شهر مابوم باسار
صادرja barmisam bolmaydu.
I must (cannot but) go to the city.

اتباث سباست بولاس
Atbi satmisam bolman.
I must (cannot but) sell the horse.

پرطای سالاق بولاس
bassay almisaq bolmas.
We must buy (take) the wheat.

بولاس تاجی ماقااق بولماي مد?
Yolda tingi maqaq bolmaandu?
Can you not walk quietly along the road?

251. c) USE OF BOLSA WITH KERUK TO EXPRESS NECESSITY

بولسا bolsa is used with the impersonal verb كراک kärük, it is necessary to express necessity.

بو کسی صادر اخوناق دادیس بولسا کراک
Bu kisi Sadir Agunniq dadisi bolsa kärük.
This person must be Sadir Axun's father.
PART XIII

SAMPLE SENTENCES ANALYZED

The following sentences, forty in number, have been selected from three newspapers published in 1948 in Urumchi, Chinese Turkestan: خیبر Shina جیق جیق تختین Qipaoq Gazeti Sinkiang Gazette, یائین قین Yalqin Flame, and یانق آئک Freedom.

This group of fairly complicated sentences include typical examples of gerundial and participial construction and of indirect discourse as used in journalistic language.

The sentences are handled in the following manner:
First, the sentence is given in the Arabic script as it appears in the newspaper; second, the sentence is transliterated into Latin script and set off into translatable phrases; and third, the sentence is translated phrase by phrase as literally as possible and in acceptable English word order. Then, the grammatical structure of the sentence is analyzed. The analysis attempts to be quite full in the earlier sentences but becomes progressively less detailed up to the last ten which are translated without comment.

-275-
1. Америка—рос-союзни билимдап чыгыларга Алып бариш жоку билимдап чыгыларга?

a. Америка — рус-союзни билимдап чыгыларга б. алмандар жеңи сабы иткенип чыгарылдыргындар?

a. If war breaks out between America and Russia, b. which side will the Germans take?

Subject and predicate: "the Germans will take." is in the immediate future tense; the plural sign is omitted.

The subordinate clause states literally: if there is (suddenly) an American-Russian war.

In the compound Америка—росс-союзни American-Russian war, 
Америка—росс is treated as a noun modifying another; this is indicated by the possessive suffix е its attached to союзни. it.

if there becomes (suddenly) is a complex verb; the auxiliary verb is if it remains denotes that the condition is unexpected.

2. Бул уу сондай иштебелер аткармай сиядеги Алып бериш деб соруу көрүп чыгарылдыргындар?

a. Ман аса-бостандар ыкысында б. алмандар билимдеп көрүп чыгарылдыргындар?

a. Thus, confronted by such disputes, b. what will the Germans think?

Subject and predicate: "the Germans will see (at the time).

The verb is in the complex form; the auxiliary in the present-immediate future tense, expresses an action taking place at a given moment. The construction is the widely
used momentaneous tense: literally, will be seeing (at the
given moment).

The verbal element of the subordinate phrase اخلاءلاق is left understood. It modifies آنلاجر and states literally, (being) in the presence of such disputes.

گارش against normally is a post-position governing the
dative case; here it is taken as a noun modified by another
substantive اخلءلاق disputes.

ئامانیه نیک، بورک آخیر صندامی بسته، برون اولکه سنین آلماھی گه.

تاپنوروب پریشکه آریتا و آنگیسن حکومتیه ری تزار قیلتان ایدی.

a. آمنیی בהیک بیعک انجیر سناقائی بولیجن
b. رور

یلکسی ایسی آلمنییا یا گیتیرپ بوریسکا

c. امریکا و انگلیس حکومتیه ری تزار قیلتان ایدی.

c. The American and British governments have decided
b. to give back to Germany the Ruhr territory a. which is

Germany's great heavy industry region.

Subject and predicate: آریتا و آنگیسن حکومتیه ری تزار قیلتان ایدی the American and British governments have decided.

The complex verb تاینوروب پریشکه returning gives is the complement of the main verb of the sentence and is translated as an infinitive. The invariable part of the compound کاینوروب returned carries the meaning and the variable element پریشکه for giving, emphasizes the fact that the action is carried out on behalf of someone other than the
actor, the American and British governments.
is an example of the verbal noun in َبُرْبُرَة being employed as an infinitive.

*بُرْبُرَة* has the causative affix ْبُرْبُرَة to make a transitive verb of the intransitive َبُرْبُرَة, *qaylamaq, to turn.*

*بُرْبُرَة* has two complements: the direct object ِرَبِّي, *Rabi* territory and the indirect object ِبِهَا, *to Germany.*

is modified by the expanded participial modifier: َبِهَا, َبِهَا, *which is Germany's great heavy industry region.*

This type of participial phrase is usually equivalent, as here, to a relative clause in English. The verbal element is in the form of a past participle without ending َبُرْبُرَة.

The subject of the phrase in َبِهَا, *has three different types of modifiers standing before it:*

1. nearest and most intimately connected to it: َبِهَا, *industry (this is a noun modifier which requires the possessive suffix on the noun modified).*

2. two adjective modifiers: َبِهَا, *heavy and َبِهَا, great,* and (3) the genitive modifier َبِهَا, *Germany's,* which also requires the possessive suffix on the noun modified.

4. َبِهَا


-278-
a. According to news received; b. students who will be transferred from the south; c. must take with them (money to cover) travel costs and the cost of winter clothing.

- Subject and predicate: the students must take.

The subject اذى students is in the genitive to connect it to اذى themselves.

The predicate كوكا كوكا must take consists of the impersonal verb كوكا كوكا plus the complex verb كوكا is literally, necessary having taken if they go. كوكا is idiomatically used with the present conditional; note sentence 5 below.

In the phrase اذى together with themselves, اذى is used as a personal pronoun rather than a reflexive.

The predicate has a compound direct object: road expenses and winter clothing expenses. The two parts are joined by و and the inflectional affixes ل (plural sign, possessive suffix, accusative case ending) are attached only to the second item.

ثلى is a typical relative adjective formed of the noun نت winter and the relative suffix used, as here, to make adjectives of nouns. As تثلث is a pure adjective, the noun modified كوكا clothing does not take the possessive suffix. On the other hand, خراجت expenses being modified by the substantive كوكا requires the possessive suffix.

خراجت is the Arabic plural of خراج expense; thus خراجت has a double plural.

كثرTheir, functioning as a participial modifier of states literally, those who will be allowed to come.
It is derived from كل come with the following affixes:

- ت (causative), ل (passive), ـ (present gerund), د (present participle). The use of the present participle on the present gerund stem denotes time in the immediate future.

د (present participle) states to bring by transfer i.e., to transfer.

In the introductory remark, آلمان STATEMENTS according to news received آلمان is in the passive form (note the affix following ل in the stem), although the active آلمان can be used in the same sense, which has been received.

5. 

هندستاندیه تورکستانیا قرب یولفا چېقاتار و یابیا ملتانما چرکه محجر

بیوتداشلاپیمپ بیونکن څالهپس چېین تورکستان سکونتین مکوار و

مختل پارام لیسته مه کره بولیمه چرکه.

a. Hindustanin turkistantina qaraq yolqay qiggenlar, b. va d. baqar meleketlarski xâyosir yardqaglarimiz e. bukันki xalqayiq qinii turkistant sekkondin meddi va menvi yardqim ista moskä holsa kiräk.

b. Refugee compatriots of ours in other countries and
a. on the road leading to Turkestan from Hindustan c. must seek material and moral assistance from the present day democratic Chinese Turkestan government.

Subject and predicate: پورتداشلاپیمپ ایسته مه کره بولیمه چرکه

our compatriots must request

As پورتداشلاپیمپ compatriots is modified by the substantive بیونکن, refugee the possessive suffix our is attached. The resultant compound مه کره بیوتداشلاپیمپ.
refugee compatriots is modified by two different types of relative expressions: (1) the noun of place countries in the locative case with the relative suffix کی کی (who are in other countries); (2) the expanded past participle یولغا چتتا کار who are on the road.

The past participle carries the plural sign لار لأر because it is separated from the word modified. If the participle were used as the subject of the main verb, it would take the form چتتا کاری i.e. with the possessive suffix attached: those who are on the road.

The participle یولغا چتتا کار has the adverbial complement یولغا چتتا کار which is closely bound to it, and یولغا چتتا کار in turn has an adverbial complement هندستان کن تورکستان کر کرب lit., looking to Turkestan from Hindustan. چتتا کار here is used as a post-position governing the dative case and having the sense in the direction of.

The predicate is the idiomatic compound consisting of کره کی it is necessary and a form of the present conditional, here in the present progressive, استه به کرده بولسه. استه به کرده بولسه کر که must request. The same meaning could be expressed by the following forms: استه به بولسه کر که, and استه به کر که istag bolsa kirak, and استه به کر که istasë kirak.

toonukuny Amerikan gezine leri istoriyade de degi asebit tamlanlada barzalal.

a. Yesterday’s American newspapers c. state b-d. that.
Soviet officials in Austria are trying everything possible
c. to sabotage the Marshall Plan.

Subject and predicate: newspapers write

The subject is modified by American which is
treated as a noun rather than an adjective. This compound is
modified by a relative adjective made up of a time expression
yesterday and the suffix that of
ki: that of yesterday or yesterday’s.

The sentence gives a typical example of an indirect state-
ment which is in the form of an expanded past participle in the
accusative case.

The expanded participle is equivalent to an English sub-
ordinate noun clause introduced by that and has a subject and
a predicate with various complements.

The subject and predicate of the participial phrase:
Soviet officials are trying.

The subject, in compound form, modified by who are in Austria, is in the genitive case as modifying the
verbal noun which functions as the predicate.

The predicate is a compound: in trying (present progressive) and the auxiliary being (indefinite).
The auxiliary in the form of the past participle, is
the inflected part of the compound and in this instance has
three affixes: (1) the collective ending which here
makes an abstract noun of the participle which is essentially
an adjective; (2) which is the possessive
suffix serving to link it to the genitive modifier

-282-
which is the accusative case ending indicating the function of the participle as the direct object of the main verb, 

The participle جالبшедшقده ایکہ تلکسی in the form of a non-temporal gerund, which is an idiom stating literally until they come out of arms i.e., to the limit of their strength or as much as possible.

The participle has another complement in the form of an infinitive with a post-position and with its own complement: 

سوتا توشومیک اوچون lit., in order to drop into water i.e. to sabotage.

The infinitive has a direct object: مارشالل پلانیئی the Marshall Plan.

7. برلینده کی انگلیز عسکری سوزچیس اسبابیه ایله غربتہ دینه ای.

a. Berlindaki engliş askeri sözleri b. ispanya ile ürbei almaniyà arrasinda burunqî ileqanîq qayta baslamis bolşamuqini c. sülâdi.

a. The British military spokesman in Berlin c. stated
b. that relations between Spain and Western Germany may be re-established.

Subject and predicate: سوزچیس سويه دی the spokesman said.

is modified by برلینده کی the one who is in Berlin, انگلیش English, and عسکری military.
is a derived noun made up of word plus the agent suffix and with the possessive suffix (following a vowel).

Subject and predicate of the indirect statement:

that former relations may again be started.

as the subject of the participle is in the genitive case and is modified by the post-positional phrase between Spain and Western Germany. between is a post-position governing the nominative case as is with which as here is often translated and. The latter is a variant (Turkish) of بلان.

The predicate of the participial phrase is an interesting formation: the hearsay auxiliary is attached to the present gerund beginning and is the main part of the complex verb. The auxiliary verb is used here to suggest the possibility of carrying out the action; otherwise the auxiliary would be .

again is the present gerund of the intransitive verb to return and is used as an adverb.
a. Cemabi Amerikanıñ Bogota ülkecinä şigaratqan La Razon
atlıq nouns şinetesi b. "Gitler Kolombia da mudur?" dıgän
mevzuulq bir meqaläsindä c. alman diktatori Gitlerinä yaljın
oer isim ustıda Bogotağa 45 kilometr yiraqda boljän "Fakatativa"
dıgän yerdi saqlanmaqta ikänligini d. yazmaqtadır.

a. The evening newspaper named "La Razon," which is published
in the Bogota region of South America, d. states b. in a
special article entitled "Is Hitler in Colombia?" c. that
the German dictator, Hitler, under a false name, is being kept
in a place called "Fakatativa" which is a 45 kilometers distant
from Bogota.

Subject and predicate of the main clause: 
the newspaper writes.

Part "a" above is the total subject, i.e. the subject and
all its modifiers:  "La Razon" evening (noun modifier);  "Is
which is named La Razon (relative adjective from  c. name);
Hitler is being kept" etc., which is published ... (expanded participle).

Part "d" is the main verb in the present progressive tense.

Part "b" is the adverbal complement of the verb writes.

Part "a" in its article is modified by an adjective
together with  ş utilized as an indefinite article placed between
the adjective and the noun (an innovation from Turkish) and by
an expanded participle.

Part "c" is the indirect statement with subject and predic-
icate:  "Hitler is being kept.

The post-positional phrase under a false name modifies the adjective
lying is a past participle in form.  "Hitler. The adjective under is usually
used with the nominative.

-285-
Note that the expanded adverbial complement of the predicate of the indirect statement is translated almost exactly in reverse order:

in a place called "Ecatative", which is at a distance of 45 kilometers to Bogota.

9.


a. Pat pat Bogota'ya kelip kino'n kira'mligini
b. ogulama'star.

b. It is revealed a. that he came often to Bogota and entered a cinema.

This sentence gives an indirect statement with the main clause consisting of one word: "1 it is revealed."
The verb-making affix "1 open." is attached to the adjective "it is revealed.

The predicate of the subordinate clause (so to speak) is a substantivized participle in the accusative case, "that he entered," with the subject be given by the possessive suffix.

This participle has dependent on it a secondary predicate in the form of a past gerund "open"
came.

10.

روسته اورونبورگدا هم اورواسکیده کی عسکرلری گالان قونلار بیشتر

a. Rasniq orumbur'da hım orunskișki askerleri b. xuani

çoğul buva üstüliqu c. arguaidin ibarılym, d. leikin

-226-
ular yol adasip e. qogqani tuta almejanlar.

a. Russian soldiers (stationed) at Orenburg and Orsk c. were sent after him b. to pursue and seize the khan, d. but they lost the road e. and were not able to capture the one that escaped.

Russian soldiers from Orenburg and Orsk were sent to pursue and seize the khan who had escaped, but, losing the road, they were unable to capture him.

This compound sentence consists of two independent clauses joined by the conjunction لکین but. The first subject and predicate:UISکل e. the soldiers were sent. The second subject and predicate: أوران توپا آلغانلار they were not able to capture.

Note that لکین which is a transitive verb has the passive affix in ل. لکین has as complement the verbal noun with post-position ن� توپا اوجون in order to seize. توپا has subordinate to it a past gerund بورغلاب pursued which functions as a secondary predicate.

توپا آلغانلار is a complex verb with the main part in the form of a present gerund تورا capturing; the auxiliary verb آلغانلار is inflected and in the negative. آلغانلار to take plus the present gerund, as here, is the usual construction to express possibility.

توپا آلغانلار has two verbal complements: فاجنتس (1) the one that escaped is a past participle used as a noun; note that the expected possessive suffix is omitted. The past participle is in the accusative case as it is the direct object of نوق آداب (2) having lost the road is a type of adverbial complement and is a secondary predicate.
subordinate to the main verb of the clause. The phrase might be translated because they lost the road.

Subject and predicate: خداي‌دار خان بارغان Khudayar Khan went.

has a complement in the form of the non-temporal gerund in because he could not produce. The gerund is a compound verb expressing possibility, here in the negative.

Subject and predicate: لکین بیرده بیر تروه چئارب پولیساتئی حس قلب اول ترکمئالر از تاراقن ایران پریه هیره شهی‌هی‌ه تکنال. Leikin buyerda bir næran qigariq holmasligini b. his qilip c. ul turkmenlar argaliq iron jorjiga herat sähariqga qigyan.

b. because he felt, a. however, that there was no possibility of promoting anything here, c. he with the aid of some Turkmenans went to the city of Herat in the land of Iran.

Subject and predicate: ولیجا he went.

has subordinate to it a past gerund functioning as a secondary predicate; having felt.
in its turn governs a complex verbal expression ってきた-compound that it is not possible to produce. The auxiliary verb ってきた - the inflected part of the compound is in the form of an abstract negative noun; it is in the accusative case because it, being the predicate of the indirect statement, is grammatically the direct object of してきた-coming.

by means of is a post-position governing the nominative.  причин cause to go out is the causative of  reason go out.

13. "منى ابتتان سوزى راست بیزور مو ایکن" دیب سورایدرون ایکن.

a. "منى ابتتان سوزى راست بیزور مو ایکن" دیب سورایدرون ایکن.

b. He will perhaps ask, a. "I wonder if the word he spoke is true?"

He will perhaps ask whether his statement could possibly be true.

Subject and predicate of the direct quotation:

is his word true?

The expression ابتتان سوزى مو ایکن (often given in the form ابتتان سوزى مو ایکن ) expresses doubt or conjecture. It occurs usually with the indefinite future (or aorist) tense, as with بیزور above.

is modified by the past participle ابتتان that he said which has as its subject in the genitive case بیزور (a variant form of بیزور ) of this.  پن is often substitutes for پن.  پن

having said is much used to separate a quotation (direct or indirect) from the rest of the sentence.
Subject: a Tadzik youth.

The predicate is a complex verb consisting of two auxiliary verbs (of which  is subordinate to ) and two coordinate main verbs  took care and  prepared.

given denotes that the action is carried out to the benefit of someone other than the actor (the subject of the sentence);  stood implies a long-continuing action. The auxiliaries, as a unit, apply equally to the two main verbs.

The two coordinate main parts of the complex verb have each their own direct objects and are in the usual past gerund form:  took care of him and  prepared food.

  food and water is a common type of collective noun made up of two nouns of similar meaning to form a general term.  denotes food in the general sense.

  is modified by an expanded past participle used as an adjective. Such a participial phrase is equivalent to a relative clause in English.
Subject and predicate: a. The Russian generals, d. however, would not even take notice of

b. the old khan who had become thin and broken because of long
exile and suffering. c. and died in such a condition like a
rather ordinary man.

The expanded predicate of course is: did not take.

This predicate has two coordinate direct objects in the
form of past participles used as nouns in the accusative case:
the one that died and the one that became thin and broken.

is a complex verb with a compound
main part: became thin and became broken. The subject is
the old khan. The expanded participle has as an
adverbial complement a post-positional phrase
because of long exile and suffering. The post-
position is composed of the noun cause and the
collective suffix .
The second participial direct object that died has two adverbial complements: in which places i.e. in such a condition; and like a rather ordinary man.

place with the plural sign gives an abstract meaning: condition.

The second complement utilizes the likeness suffix like or as. The suffix expresses limited degree; thus rather ordinary.

خانیخ رویو ارچون ۴ندنر اوزن اوزن اوئن لازمین اونئتوئوش بور:
10. a. Xənniŋ ruhi ûpün b. mündin mu aşirraqi c. uniq xalqi taraflıdin d. unutulus dür.

a. For the khan's spirit b. even harder than this (is the fact that) d. (he) is forgotten c. by his people.

Subject and predicate: (he) is forgotten.

forget has the passive affix and the reciprocal . He is understood.

This type of passive sentence utilizes the post-position by the Turkish manner.

a harder thing than this is the regular method of comparing one thing to another; than is expressed by the ablative case ending and the adjective has the comparative suffix with the possessive suffix to relate it to an unstated antecedent.

The post-position is used with the nominative case.
Subject and predicate: نابیناگزار خراب پیائهان factories were destroyed.

The first خراب پیائهان which were damaged is the past participle used as an adjective modifying آله کوب – نابیناگزار the most is the regular superlative form.

The predicate خراب پیائهان were destroyed stands in the normal position at the end of the sentence. This has an adverbial complement بترته دیگره که as if saying completely.

All of part *ب* is in apposition to the subject of the sentence to specify which factories are most damaged:

especially factories operating in . . . . The agent suffix جی attached to the verbal noun in گر (originally the sign of the future participle) forms an expression denoting a constant functioning of a thing; thus، ایشته گچی نابیناگزار operating factories، or factories that operate. In another use ایشته گچی might mean operator.
As inherently verbal in nature it can have adverbiaal complements, here a series of post-positional phrases utilizing Īlaqīlāt near, Īlāqīlāt along (note plural form of Īlāqīlāt edge), Īlaqīlāt in the place.

18. "

a. Birinci va ikinci dünə soyqilarini ta'imin qilgan
b. alman soyqisi industriyasini yoqatmaq hedefini kütüklərini təxirələyən

c. tərt müxtəlif qollanaraq a. bu məqsədləri  

 d. This policy, e. that the four allies employed b. and which had as its goal the destruction of the German war industry

e. that had supplied the first and second world wars, e. was the most effective system for destroying German industry.

Subject and predicate: Bu siyasəti bələdi this policy was. The subject, in the middle of the sentence, has two expanded modifiers: (1) "təxəllüləri" (2) "təxəllüləri" which intended aiming at the goal. The latter expression has a direct complement in the form of an infinitive to destroy. The compound noun the German war industry, which is the direct object of the infinitive is modified by the expanded participles having the predicate hərəkət etdiləri which supplied.

-354-
effective is an example of an adjective derived from a noun effect by means of the collective suffix.
The particle ِّيَّ which here functions as a relative verbal modifier, which aims at destroying is made up of five elements: the noun ِّديَّexistence, the verb-making suffix ِّم, causative affix ِّم, verbal noun ending ِّم, and the agent suffix ِّم. The affixes ِّم and ِّم together usually denote purpose or intention.

19. بوبهای‌ها لالارا بوزوب کچ‌های به تاماگاشی یوکون اسکان آلمان صنایع‌ها بوزد ۴۵-۴۰ ی آبی آستید گرد و حال یک کافی و وسیله‌دان کیکی‌دان یک بیوک اوجنی‌ان سلسلهٔ قوت‌مند نشکل قیمت‌داده‌داد.

a. Romberdensonlarja, huzup köşürtüp keşilşerq qaramasdin b. bugün eski alman sanatlğinin yüzük ۴۰-۴۵'i synq astıda dur c. ve bu halı bilim ameriya ve rusiyadin kiinki dünyaniq ۴۵ büyük üşüngi sanat quvvatıni teşkil qilmaqdadur.

a. Despite bombings and despite dismantlings and removals, b. today German industry stands at ۴۰-۴۵ percent of its former capacity, c. and thus, after America and Russia, it constitutes the world's third greatest industrial power.

The two independent clauses of the compound sentence both have their subjects understood; the predicates are: آبی آستیدا در stand at (lit., is under foot) and تشکیل قیمت‌دان یک it constitutes.
Part "b" literally states, today it stands at 40-45 per cent of the former German industry.

The possessive suffix relates the number to of the former German industry and is in the genitive case.

Despite is an example of the negative future participle in with the ablative case ending used as a secondary predicate. states literally, without looking at. The corresponding positive form of this verb of course would be the regular past gerund in looking at or concerning. From another viewpoint one might say is used as a post-position governing the dative case. As such it has two complements: (1) the noun bombings and (2) the compounded complex verb in noun form dismantlings and removals.

As is normal with complex verbs, the meaning is given by the past gerund in of which there are two here: dismantled and removed. The two gerunds are made into plural nouns by their common auxiliary verb which also has the dative case ending required by the post-position. The auxiliary verb go gives to the entire verbal expression a sense of direction, away.
a. Rather than remaining idle, b. he tried to occupy himself with the business of horse-trading c. and also lent money on the side, d. but he was unable to get back any of his money.

The predicates of the three independent clauses (connected by the conjunctions ـ ـ ـ and ـ ـ ـ) are all in the form of complex verbs and have as a subject in common ـ ـ ـ ـ which is at the very beginning of the sentence.

The first clause has as predicate ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ tried to occupy himself. ـ ـ ـ look after used as an auxiliary usually is translated as try or wish.

ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ states literally, saying, as he was idle. The equative suffix ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ attached to the past participle is most often translated as or while.

The second predicate is ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ stood suggests an enduring action. The adverbial expression ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ states in work of this sort. ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ work is in the plural to convey the idea of abstractness.

The third predicate is properly the verb of possibility ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ he could not take. ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ ـ returned (transitive) is an example of the past gerund used merely as an adverb and is translated by the adverb back.
a. Ölgənini üstünlük təşəbbüs diqqətdə b. unuy yanğınlığın bir kisi uan sxidən, c. bundan 30 yillar əvvəli Hoqanda Salihi Can diqqət bir həyə bar bolup d. bu kişi e. ikkinçə damağı Hoqandədin axa bolup xayları idi.

- Like kicking one already dead, b. a certain person came to him and cheated him; d. this person, e. who was a boy named Salihi Can, 30 years previously in Hoqand e. had been elected to the second Duma as a member from Hoqand.

Logically this sentence breaks up into two independent sentences: parts a-b and c-e. The first has as subject and predicate a person cheated and the second, this person was elected.

This sentence directly follows the preceding one (No. 20) in the newspaper story from which both are taken (Sincan Qəsəbi, No. 238). The adverbial expression ending in as if one said serves to link the two sentences. of one who died is a past participle used as a noun and is in the genitive case because it is followed by a post-position, to the top of. A similar post-position is to the side of.

The first sentence has two other past participles: who came used as a relative modifier, and cheated used as a finite verb.

The second sentence has two past gerunds used as secondary predicates: (1) there was or there having been and (2) being member.
a. The air schools of the interior of China
b. have instructed
the Education Ministry
c. to approve students also from among
the Turkish youth of our province
d. and will admit them.

Subject and predicate: هوا اوتولاري قبول فلاچاق the air schools will admit.

In order to approve is an instance of the verbal noun in -ig being used as an infinitive.

Made interest known is a secondary predicate with the same subject هوا اوتولاري air schools as the finite verb.
a. The advancement of Soviet animal husbandry in the post-war five year plan b. involves great difficulties, c. because the German fascist invaders d. one-third of the horned cattle, sheep and goats, as well as seven million horses; e. (the number of horses in the entire United States of America g. was nine million 700 thousand in the year 1943).

Subject and predicates: 1st clause (parts a-b), advancement involves; 2nd clause (parts c-e), invaders slaughtered or drove off; 3rd clause (parts f-g), the number was.

This sentence contains five examples of the collective suffix: (1) بالمجابهة, (2) بالبلد, (3) بالبلد, (4) بالبلد or drove off; 3rd clause (parts f-g), the number was.

(1) جارودلجن, (2) a period of years (collective); (3) تبديل, (4) a period of years (collective); (5) تبديل, difficulty (the suffix attached to the adjective difficult to make an abstraction); (4) a period of years (collective); (5) a period of years (collective).
The second clause has a secondary predicate slaughtered which is the causative form of the intransitive verb die. The main predicate is in the form of a complex verbrove off; the auxiliary part in itself means took away but here took denotes action carried out on behalf of the actor, the invaders, and went suggests direction away.

In the expression United States the word union is derived from the verb stem add or join and the noun-making suffix state is a European loanword.

21. Trueman bilän Marshall ikki turluk mühim noqtaını mülshimi bilip b. anıq birini c. qin hokumetişä hazişqi vaqt içidä yardim qilisi q. küp boluş, boimasliqi e. və 2 nqini r. qinşa biriləšürün sayatqıq yarsindiki yardim g. razo çıqış budget içidä kiris kirmaligi.

a. Truman and Marshall considered two different important points: b. the first of those, c. whether or not it would be difficult e. to help the Chinese government at the present time, f. of the appropriate aid which would be given to China.
The main verb of the sentence considered is treated like a secondary predicate with the past gerund as the auxiliary to suggest completeness of action. If it were in its normal position at the end of the sentence this would be in the finite form 

The construction lit., difficult its being, its not being meaning whether or not it is difficult is rather unusual. This is the nominalized form (because it is the indefinite object of the verb considered, i.e. it is a type of indirect discourse) of the more common verbal formula Küç bolur holmas whether or not it is difficult. Kriş Kume Slihi whether or not to enter is of the same construction.


a. As Marshall today did not wish to analyze in detail Chinese conditions, c. one can see clearly and with ease d. that
no basic decision whatever was reached b. during the week preceding c. in the conversations among Marshall, Truman and other high government officials concerning the Chinese situation.

Part way is equivalent to an English clause of concession, but grammatically its main verb is a secondary predicate with the past gerund which is auxiliary to as it he did not wish. is an example of a verbal expression utilizing two verbs of similar meaning: saying is a verbal noun from the verb say and analyzed modifies it as an adverb. Note that the verbal noun, which is the inflected element, has the accusative case ending as the entire expression, equivalent to an English infinitive, is the direct object of the verb as he did not wish.

The non-temporal gerund in order to see also is used in this sentence as an infinitive following it is possible.

The negative past participle in the accusative case, nominalized by the collective suffix , is the predicate of the indirect statement following the verb that they were not able to wish.

20. يُنزداق بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون
آزِالَابِش بِهِ بِهِ مَجَالِدَهُ مَلِى خَواَهِلَاسُون M
a. Bundaq bir məcazədə məstitial xəshallasın, məyli xəshallamasın
araləşip  b. bir qism nüfusunun tekrar şələnmənin qoşağığa təşəq
berişkə meşər bulaq bulaq bolən  c. alməniyə bundaq bir soqumni
qandaq arzu qilsan?

c. How can Germany desire such a war  b. in which it must
inevitably lose again a part of its population  a. if it gets
implicated in such a struggle whether voluntarily or not.

Subject and predicate: آلبانی آوزو قیلسۆن may Germany
wish

آلبانی آوزو قیلسۆن become implicated is a secondary predicate and
is modified by an adverbial expression
willingly or not willingly lit., let him wish
gladly, let him not wish gladly.

اولونکا توچانیقا تاشلا پرۆکه سییسەی بولخان
must inevitably lose, lit., must inevitably throw into the
arms of death is the predicate of a participial clause modifying
آلبانی آوزو قیلسۆن inevitably states literally,
what will be, will be. دەگەر necessary has as infinitive
complement the verbal noun in the dative case پرۆکه to give
which here is the auxiliary part of the complex verb
پرۆکه to throw.

بیورتومزده مەخار فیشلەری بیوڕۆڵۆننلەتە آکینه وەئە بولخان پوڵساو
مکایەر بانک کەنەرەب کەنە تەکنەسەەیەن بەسەی بەوانوو اووانوو ایشلەه وەڕەک
الجە دەبەنوتەتیار بولوب کەئەن نەبەدی.

a. Yürtmizdə maqif isəri yığanızılgəngə anqəd qağt bolən
bolsanı,  b. mekteplər bek kohnərap kətkənlikdən  c. bu'zi

-304-
OGUS QUTUS İSLÄRİMÄGÄ ANÄG TÖSQÄNLÜQLAR BOLUP KELGÄN IDI.

a. Despite the fact that (these) education projects were initiated some time ago in our country, c. a number of obstacles to several of our education projects have arisen
b. because the schools have become very old.

Subject and predicate: توسونۇوقوزلار يولوب كۆلگەن ايدى obstacles had come into being.

Two words meaning education are used in this sentence: the Arabic loan مازرف and the typical native collective composed of two words of similar meaning, اوتۇوش اوتونوش learning-teaching.

پيرخوزوللا نەگ is an example of the past participle in the dative case expressing the idea of since or ago. تێرخوز cause to move is the normal causative of the intransitive تێر move.

b. Birläskän milletlär umumı reçisidə b. Säviet va ukraynanih c. “bes häyük devlet qoral küzini üçda birgä tüpsürsün və atom bombası yoq atilsun” d. digän teklifi e. köplülük tarafidin röd qilindi.

a. In the United Nations General Assembly b–d. the proposal of the Soviet and Ukraine stating c. that the five great states reduce their armed strength to one-third and that the atom bomb be abolished e. was rejected by the majority.
This sentence has a typical direct quotation (complete with western quotation marks) closed by دیگر ن said; the verbs state literally تیکشون let them reduce and دیگر ن تیکشون let be abolished.

29. بلجیکا و فرانس و "تورالسیانیا کپ‌الیین تدقيق تیکش بتون دوئنیکا تورال کچینی تکسورف هر زمان نشر تیل توروش اوچون بیر خلق آرا کوپنترول هیئتی تورالسیانیا" دیگر ن تکشون نفاکیت اوسپیده نه.

a. Beligga và fransāg b. "quralsizlanmaq yollarını tadqiq qilish c. butun devletnin qural köçini tekshurup d. hər nəsən nəpar qilip turma üçün e. bir xalq ara kontrol heyeti qurulsun" digən f. teklifi g. muzakarı üstüddür.

f. The proposal a. of Belgium and France e. to establish an international control commission c. to scrutinize the armed strength of all states d. and periodically to publish reports (on this) b. and to study ways of disarmament g. is under discussion.

The predicate of the direct quotation تورالسیانیا let be established has two infinitive complements both governed by نشر تیل توروش (1) to publish and تیکشتن تیل تیل (2) to examine. scrutinized is in the position of secondary predicate to نشر تیل توروش اوچون قروالسی "unarmed is the normal negative form of the adjective تورال armi; the adjective is made into a passive verb by means of the affix لن and here, with the infinitive ending, تورالسیانیا means to be disarmed or disarmament.

-306-
As the year 1948 draws to a close and the year 1949 approaches, the Ministry of Construction has issued an order comprising several different articles to the mills and factories under its control, requesting information whether or not the plan were completed if working according to a quantitative plan. A quantity of equipment and goods to be produced in 1948 and (as to) how, beginning with the year 1949 it might be possible to increase production.
a. Top guda yasalmaqda bolyan  b. yeji liman (vapur taktayduyrigen orum)  c. iqtisadi qiyinciliga urusnamu  d. aayu tonna aqrirligida vapur taktaydiying yeni bir liman olarnag,  e. yasalip holdi.

b. A new port (a place where ships stop),  a. which has been under construction at Tangku,  c. has been completed  d. as a new port capable of berthing ships of 3000 tons weight  e. despite the fact that economic difficulties were encountered.

32. بئر شرطی اینجیده آریگین کاپونیک فارسی دینی بیشتردی.

جماهیر جمیس بولجدا دومار تلاردورتیقیدا سرگز شیبین پېکر.

a. Sa surtlar içində  b. Amerikanın  c. komunizmət qarşı dünyə medeniyətinin himayəsi rolmaqda  d. davam qiladırqanalığında  e. hərqi sərhədə yoqduur!

a. Within these terms  e. there is never any doubt  b-d. that America will continue  e. being the defender of world civilization against Communism.

33. اسکریتش جه برعسلکت غزیه سدی پایتاغناهن بو کاناک "پالین" آرقاتیل خلقیطور گنجه تقدیم نهند باز بین یبی طرفیز. یزنن تاشیمیز خلقیت قدر خیلی بردن. "پالین" بین قاندئلا بو مثاله بولیسون جه بیطرفن به باسنمن "پالین" دا نمیر قولاينیزه.
a. Notice:  d. We are non-partisan  e. in the presentation to our people by "Yalqin" of this article
b. published in a newspaper of a foreign country.  c. Our purpose  f. is to inform our people of world political trends.
g. In this connection,  j. we can publish in "Yalqin"
h. any article whatsoever  i. without pleading for any faction.

34. كُرْبَان شِيْخٍ يُصَبِّرُ كُورُمُ تَرُزَ بِهِ اللَّوْيَةُ مَوْكِرُ ادْوَرُ لِفَوْزِي
تَخَطَّاشُن بِهَا اسْلاَمِي بِهَا تَحْتَانِي بِيروْسُنَ ٍبَابِتُ كَنْدَرَ كَبِيٍّ
توُرُوشُ مَالَارْيِ بِرِكَ اِحْوَالْا تَارَابُ تَخَطَّاشُن بِهَا تَارَابُ بِها
قَرِيبُ بِرِيْلُ بِلِينَ ادْوارُ قِتْلَانُ.

a. şeker, seker, gay, kümür, toz bahalarını  h. merkez
idara ve 3. toxtaşan bahega araşanıp  e. bahar toxtatıp
hersemi.  d.怕ya kündelik turnası malları  e. yerlik
ahvalına qarap  r. toxtaşan bahega qarap  g. bahar goyus yoli
hişan  h. idara qilinən.

c. They are to set  a. the prices of yard goods, sugar, tea,
coal and salt  b. basing them on the prices the Central
Administration itself has set.  d. Other daily necessities
h. are to be administered g. by setting their prices
f. based on those established e. by local conditions.

35. دوروئی تبیکلکه شکه حاسیرانشیوجیلار ایشلری وش تیغتاتیب. سایلانیش
امکانیتی بیله آز پولفان تورماشی تبیکلکه شکه توئری. کلله تلگیدن
توضیح‌ه قالشاندا.

a. Duvini tebriklaşkä hazerlanışqilar işlärini toxtatip,
b. savlanış imkaniyeti bek az bolğan c. Trumanni tebriklaşkä
toğr kölgänligidin d. taaçûba qalıqmaqda.

d. They were surprised e. because they had to congratulate
Truman, b. who had very small possibility of being elected,
a. and suspended work preparatory to congratulating Dewey.

36. رسول برلینس ساونیه جامه تیکه تووشوئش ایسته کتیه که غری
آلمانه دولتینجه مرکزی قیلنئینو ایسته کتیه.

a. Ruslar berlinni saviet câm'iyetiğä qosunsi istagıniidik, b. ýarbi almaniyä devletinin merkezi qilişni mu isteydur.

a. Just as the Russians want to annex Berlin to Soviet society,
b. Western Germany desires to make it capital of the state.

37. مارشال بر گون توئشدن صولک مخبری شکه ضیافتی بیلیه. جین احوالاتی
اوستیدئه، افتتاحه بیلیه بردن: اما کوز آلدیزدیکی وضیعه
آستیدئا آمریکا دولتینه قابس خل بیر سیاست نوللاناده دوختی.
a. Marshall this afternoon gave a banquet to correspondents and
b. issued a brief statement concerning the Chinese situation;
f. but he did not explain e. what part of the aid would be
given to China d. nor what sort of policy the American
政府 would pursue c. under present conditions.

38. حاضر تشدیل هیئت بونی تصویت‌الله بلکن توده کی شرط‌در
الکری سروله ن: پریل 11 نجی آیدن باشلاپ تحریر اضلری
اوجون هر آیا 400 دولار آلتون آتا بیریش و تحریر-ترجیه
اهلیتی مسئول کمیلیش تشدیل هیئت طرفیان به لکالش.

a. Hazar teşvikat heyeti b. buni tasdiqlash bilan
c. təşəbbəsədən şərtlər ilərə sürələn: d. Bu yıllı 11-nci
səddin başlayap e. tahrirat əsləri üçün hər ayda 400 dollar
altun aşq beris r. və tahrir-terəmə əslərinin mes'ul
ci̇lərinini g. teşvikat heyeti təsəffiindən belləldi̇:

a. Now the propaganda committee b. ratified this, and
c. the following terms were proposed: r. that persons
d. responsible for correspondence and translation work se. and that each month
400 dollars in gold currency be provided for correspondence
work  d. commencing the 11th month of the current year.

39. تعینت بالاتانیاک اولکم بزِکی اعضااکی قاتناک اشیله کی
بولفارلدن بکتوب ارتقاب خبرلیش خبرنامه ک حاضم اوروجیجی کی
تعینت اعضااکی بالیاشیا خیلی تادر سمنی و سار
خانم 16-توبا بردا وزوریش اولکم لک حکومت ارتقاب بالاتانیا معلم
قلیغلیان ایمک.
a. Teftiş palataşini üçün misidləri b. qatnasp
isiləri kimi bolşunludin c. mektup ærgiliq xabarlasıp
tarqandık d. həzar urumuşdik teftiş a'zalaridin bolşen
Maliyya Qoş, Qadar Səməni və Sərə Xanım 16-noyəbdə
çələrini e. ülləkili hökumət ærgiliq palataşa məlum qilən
imis.

a. Just as the members of the examining board of our province
c. were reporting together by means of letter  b. due to the
lack of (other) communications,  c. it was announced to the
board through the provincial government  d. that currently
the Urunchi examining members include, as of 16 November,
Maliyya Qoş, Qadar Səməni and Sərə Xanım.

40. شو مئند د خدایار اینیان ایکان؟ "الهی سن مینا کیا پاکین کی
به جهت میخست تیلب پرانتسن که من یافتگونه توروپ هیچ
مزائلان سنا آیات قالم ۱۶۸ که سن مینا کیانتیزره که
آسلام بولاپور؟
a. Şu vaqtə Xadayar sýtqan iken: b. "Ilahi c. sən
menin başınıni şu neçəlik bəxtsiz qilip yaratsın  d. ki

-312-
mən yalğuz yinə turup  e. hic bir memleketkə siya alməy qaldım,  f. ilahi sən menin canımın tezrək aləsq bolmasın?"  
a. Then Xudayar prayed:  b. O God,  c. Thou hast visited  
so much sorrow on my head  d. that I stand quite alone  
e. and cannot find room in any country.  f. O God, canst  
Thou not immediately take away my soul?"
BIBLIOGRAPHY

BASKAKOV, N. A. The Turkic Languages of Central Asia: Problems of Planned Culture Contact. [A translation of an article entitled The Turkic Peoples of the USSR: the Development of their Languages and Writing by Professor N. A. Baskakov, with comments by Dr. Stefan Warm.] London (Central Asian Research Centre in association with St. Antony's College, Oxford, Soviet Affairs Study Group), 1952?

BOROVKOV, A. K. Uchebnik Ujgurskogo Yazyka. Leningrad, 1935. [A very useful grammar presenting the literary language in both romanized and Arabic scripts with exercises and a rather incomplete glossary.]


GABAIN, A. von Alttürkische Grammatik. Leipzig (Harrassowitz), 1930.

Üzbekische Grammatik. Leipzig (Harrassowitz), 1945. [A fine reference grammar with romanized texts and glossary.]

JARRING, Gunnar Materials to the Knowledge of Eastern Turki. Vol. I-IV. Lund (Gleerup), 1946-51. [Very fine texts from oral sources depicting the spoken language and presented in romanized form with English translation.]

Studien zu einer Osttürkischen Lautlehre. Lund (Borelius), 1933. [A fine presentation of the phonology.]

The Uzbek Dialect of Qilich (Russian Turkestan). Lund (Gleerup), 1937. [Grammatical sketch and romanized texts with English translation.]

MAIDOV, S. E. Ujgurskiy Yazyk. Moscow, 1954. [Texts from oral sources (Qomul dialect) in a Cyrillic-based script with Russian translation and glossary.]

MILLI TÜRKİSTAN. Düsseldorf, Germany. (Journal of the National Turkistan Unity Committee for the Struggle of National Liberation of Turkestan. Editor and publisher, Veli Kajum-Khan.) [Useful texts in Turkestani (generalized Turkic with elements from all dialects), with texts in Latin and Arabic scripts and in English.]


NASILOV, V. M. Grammatika Ujgurskogo Yazyka. Moscow, 1940. [A very useful grammar of the current language utilizing a romanized script.]


English-Turki Dictionary. Lund (Gleerup), 1927. [A small but useful vocabulary.]


SHAHIDI, Borhan. Ujgunsko-Kitajsko-Busskiy Slovari. Peking, 1952. [A very useful dictionary (based on the 1912 Uigur-Russian dictionary of Baskakov) with the East Turki words given in a reformed phonetic Arabic script.]

SHAW, Robert B. Turki Language as Spoken in Eastern Turkestan. (Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal.) Calcutta, 1878-80. [Grammatical sketch and Turki-English dictionary.]

VÁMBÉRY, Ármin Cagataische Sprachstudien. Leipzig (Brockhaus), 1867. [Grammatical sketch and Turki-German dictionary.]


WURM, Stefan Der özbekische Dialekt von Andidschan. Vienna, 1915. [Grammatical sketch and romanized texts with German translation.]
APPENDIX I

VERBAL FORMS

The following presentation of verbal forms is divided into two parts. The first gives the non-finite forms which include gerunds (verbal adverbs), participles (verbal adjectives), and verbal nouns. These are grouped not by function but according to stem: first the gerunds, present and past; then the future, past and present participles; the verbal nouns; and finally the non-temporal gerunds.

The most commonly used finite verbs are presented in the second part. The verbs are given in columns and again are divided according to the stem, as follows:

Column 1 gives the imperative forms.

Column 2 gives the possessive conjugations (past definite and conditional).

Columns 3-7 present the tenses based on the gerunds and participles.

Column 8 lists the tenses based on verbal nouns.

Column 9 gives miscellaneous tense forms.

The translations given of the verbal forms in both parts suggest the most usual meanings.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present gerund:</th>
<th>qila</th>
<th>doing, continuously; doing and doing</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qila qila</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilmay</td>
<td>without doing; not doing (and)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past gerund:</td>
<td>qilip</td>
<td>having done; doing (and)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Future participle:</td>
<td>qilar</td>
<td>will be doing; one who does</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilmas</td>
<td>will not be doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilmastin</td>
<td>without doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilmassiq</td>
<td>non-doing; state of not doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past participle:</td>
<td>qiljan</td>
<td>done; did; one who did, that which was done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qiljanliq</td>
<td>that which has been done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qiljanq &amp;</td>
<td>while he did; until he did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qiljanmak</td>
<td>as if he did, as he did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qiljanseri</td>
<td>the more he did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present participle:</td>
<td>qiladurjan</td>
<td>doing; one who does</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verbal nouns:</td>
<td>qilmaq</td>
<td>to do; doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilmagqi</td>
<td>doer; one who does</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilis</td>
<td>doing; to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilju</td>
<td>doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qiljuqi</td>
<td>doer; doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-temporal gerunds:</td>
<td>qilgi</td>
<td>(in order) to do; since doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilgija &amp;</td>
<td>while doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>qilgajq</td>
<td>after doing, just as he did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
<td>Possessive Conjugation</td>
<td>Present Gerund</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyay</td>
<td>qildim (sing.)</td>
<td>Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let me do</td>
<td>you did (sing.)</td>
<td>qilamün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I will do</td>
<td>she did</td>
<td>I do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qil:</td>
<td>he, we did</td>
<td>Compound</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilip:</td>
<td>qildiqmün (pl.)</td>
<td>qilip (ur)mün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dəl (sing.)</td>
<td>I do</td>
<td>I did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilmum</td>
<td>qildiq (pl.)</td>
<td>Past perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let him do</td>
<td>they did</td>
<td>qilip (ur)mün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyayli(q)</td>
<td>qildiq (pl.)</td>
<td>Future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let us do</td>
<td>you did</td>
<td>qilip bolamün</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>we will do</td>
<td>(plu.)</td>
<td>I will have done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilişmür</td>
<td>qildiq (pl.)</td>
<td>Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qiliş:</td>
<td>qilişt (plu.)</td>
<td>conditional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilişler:</td>
<td>qildiq (plu.)</td>
<td>Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilişler:</td>
<td>they did</td>
<td>hearsay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilişler:</td>
<td>(plu.)</td>
<td>hearsay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyaś (plu.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let them do</td>
<td></td>
<td>hearsay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyam</td>
<td>if I do</td>
<td>Subjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>if I do</td>
<td>when I do</td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subjunctive</td>
<td>may I do</td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyam</td>
<td>if I did</td>
<td>Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>if I did</td>
<td></td>
<td>possibility</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subjunctive</td>
<td></td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qilyam bolar</td>
<td></td>
<td>possibility</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>edil</td>
<td>if I did</td>
<td>Subjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>possibility</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>qilaş (plu.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past Participie</td>
<td>Present Participie</td>
<td>Verbal Nouns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present perfect</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I have done</td>
<td>I am about to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I did</td>
<td>I will do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indefinite pre-</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sent perfect</td>
<td>I have done</td>
<td>I am doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I did</td>
<td>I do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
<td>qil'ījamān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inchoative</td>
<td>I was doing</td>
<td>I was doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I was doing</td>
<td>I did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conditional Inchoative</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bolsam</td>
<td>if I begin doing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subjunctive Inchoative</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bolsam edim</td>
<td>if I had decided to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present perfect</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bar (yoq)</td>
<td>I must (not) do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I have (not) done</td>
<td>I must (not) do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I did (not)</td>
<td>I did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past Subjunctive</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bar (yoq)</td>
<td>I must (not) do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I have (not) done</td>
<td>I must (not) do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I did (not)</td>
<td>I did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present perfect</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bar (yoq)</td>
<td>I have (not)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I have (not) done</td>
<td>I have (not)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I did (not)</td>
<td>I did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past perfect</td>
<td>qil'ījamān bar (yoq)</td>
<td>I wish (not)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I had (not) done</td>
<td>I wish (not)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. In 3rd person
APPENDIX II

INDEX OF GRAMMATICAL AFFIXES

In the following alphabetical list of grammatical affixes, the standard Latin order is observed. Letters with diacritical marks follow the unmarked letters; e.g., η follows n, ő follows ő, and so on. However, the letters ἀ/ἄ are not listed separately.

Generally, only one form of an affix having variable letters is given; e.g., -γαν (not -γαν, -γαν), and -δι (not -δι), and so on.

The affix is listed in the left-hand column, its function is named, and the section number is given at the right.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Affix</th>
<th>Function</th>
<th>Section</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-α</td>
<td>Present gerund</td>
<td>128 ff., 178-81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-α</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αγάκ</td>
<td>Future tense</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aλ-</td>
<td>Verb of possibility</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αλ</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αν</td>
<td>Adverbial ending</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aγ</td>
<td>Superlative degree</td>
<td>73, 74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αο (-αυ)</td>
<td>Collective number</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αρ</td>
<td>Distributive numeral</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αρ</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αγ(-γ)</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αγλι</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αγλιακ</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-αγνιακ</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ban</td>
<td>Noun of agent</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bis</td>
<td>Conjunctonal ending</td>
<td>37, 125 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>belmaq</td>
<td>Auxiliary verb</td>
<td>37, 152 ff, 216 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çä</td>
<td>Diminutive suffix</td>
<td>27, 60, 99, 218, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çäq</td>
<td>Adjective suffix</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çi</td>
<td>Noun of agent</td>
<td>27, 60, 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çilik</td>
<td>Noun suffix</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çî</td>
<td>Relative request particle</td>
<td>214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çîke</td>
<td>Nominative case</td>
<td>33, 50, 51, 105, 216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çîk (-çäk)</td>
<td>Likeness suffix</td>
<td>28, 105, 218, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çiğ</td>
<td>Noun of agent</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çil</td>
<td>Noun suffix</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çip</td>
<td>Imperative particle</td>
<td>223-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çîve</td>
<td>Nominative case</td>
<td>35, 50, 75, 76, 105, 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çil (-çin)</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-dur</td>
<td>Auxiliary verb</td>
<td>39, 129-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-dur-</td>
<td>Causative affix</td>
<td>18, 111, 115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-durğan</td>
<td>Present participle</td>
<td>155, 204, 208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>edi-</td>
<td>Past tense stem</td>
<td>41, 142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ekän (ikän)</td>
<td>Auxiliary verb</td>
<td>40, 129, 131, 144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emök</td>
<td>Auxiliary verb</td>
<td>37, 42, 218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emäs</td>
<td>Negative auxiliary</td>
<td>42, 119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-par</td>
<td>Noun of agent</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çä</td>
<td>Dative case</td>
<td>35, 50, 51, 105, 216, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çäg</td>
<td>Non-temporal gerund</td>
<td>18, 174-75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çon</td>
<td>Past participle</td>
<td>115 ff, 203 ff</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çög</td>
<td>Verbal noun of customary action</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-çay</td>
<td>Future tense</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| -çığa | (See çûnû) | -

-328-
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prefix</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-ji li (-jini)</td>
<td>Non-temporal gerund</td>
<td>18, 170, 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-jinã</td>
<td>Diminutive suffix</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-jinlar</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ãu (ãu)</td>
<td>Polite request particle</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ãu</td>
<td>Verbal noun</td>
<td>159, 165-68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ãuã</td>
<td>Verbal noun (agent)</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>æudãk</td>
<td>Verb of probability</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>æuluq</td>
<td>Verbal noun (necessity)</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>æungã (-ãgã)</td>
<td>Non-temporal gerund</td>
<td>18, 174, 176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ãuz</td>
<td>Causative affix</td>
<td>114, 115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hãm</td>
<td>Intensive particle</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-i</td>
<td>Possessive suffix</td>
<td>47, 51, 59, 81, 88, 210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-in</td>
<td>Distributive numeral</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-iq (-i)</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-iqis (-iã)</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-iplãr</td>
<td>Imperative suffix</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-k (-ã)</td>
<td>Conjugational ending</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ki</td>
<td>Relative suffix</td>
<td>65, 79, 80, 81, 224, 226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-kir</td>
<td>Noun of agent</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-l</td>
<td>Passive stem</td>
<td>111, 112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-la</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lan</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lan</td>
<td>Collective number</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lar</td>
<td>Plural suffix</td>
<td>46, 51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lap</td>
<td>Verb-making affix</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lik</td>
<td>Collective suffix</td>
<td>21, 27, 60, 79, 82, 111, 140, 167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-m</td>
<td>Conjugational ending</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-m</td>
<td>Possessive suffix</td>
<td>47, 51, 59, 84, 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ma</td>
<td>Negative affix</td>
<td>108, 149, 295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mãm</td>
<td>Conjugational ending</td>
<td>37, 125 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prefix</td>
<td>Description</td>
<td>Pages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>------------------------------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-maq (-mâf)</td>
<td>Infinitive 139-63, ending 170, 172</td>
<td>35, 50, 55, 212-14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-maqê</td>
<td>Verb of intention 162</td>
<td>50, 51, 59, 66, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-maqta</td>
<td>Progressive tense 161</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mas</td>
<td>Negative future 139, participle 141, 141, 181</td>
<td>47, 51, 59, 81, 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-maslik</td>
<td>Negative abstraction 111</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mastin</td>
<td>Negative gerund 131</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mây</td>
<td>Negative present 127, gerund 178, 181</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>miki (mikân)</td>
<td>Particle of doubt 144</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mê</td>
<td>Verbal auxiliary 129, 132</td>
<td>133 ff., 182 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mêz</td>
<td>Conjugational 39, 125 ff. ending</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mâz</td>
<td>Conjugational 39, 125 ff. ending</td>
<td>41, 119 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-mîs</td>
<td>Possessive suffix 47, 51, 59, 81, 88</td>
<td>111, 115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mîn</td>
<td>Interrogative particle 141, 215</td>
<td>139 ff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-nîs</td>
<td>Passive stem 111, 142</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-nî</td>
<td>Reflexive verb 21</td>
<td>73, 74, 78, 98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-nî (-nîl)</td>
<td>Ordinal suffix 89</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-320-
-aa Conditional 119, 123 ff.
  affix 151 ff., 237 ff., 245, 247

dön Conjugational ending 123 ff.

-si Possessive suffix 47, 51, 59, 81, 88

-siz Negative relative 60, 83 suffix

sis (sislär) Conjugational ending 123 ff.

-sislär Imperative suffix 117

-sla Imperative suffix 117

-sun Imperative suffix 117

-sunlar Imperative suffix 117

-se Verbal noun 21, 159, 161, 170-71

-se Reciprocal verb 21, 113, 119

-ter Causative affix 111, 115

-ur- Causative affix 13, 114

-y Present gerund 126 ff.

-y Verh-making affix 109

-yaq Adverbial stem 101

-yär Adverbial stem 101

-yaba- Momentaneous tense 137, 150

-yeq Existential verb, 43, 48, negative 49, 150, 158, 163, 161, 166-67, 211

-331-